

现代
修真

天剑仙

[胡盼紫辰]
作品

2013年联袂仙侠频道最新力作

修仙者携宝重生都市，化龙腾飞！

Genius Sword Immortal

Chapters 051 - 100

By: Feng Yin Zi Chen

Translation: [Lastvoice Translator](#)

Publisher: [Yuki](#)

Table of Contents

[Chapter 051: Battle Of Words](#)

[Chapter 052: Fierce Tiger Transformed Into Sick Cat](#)

[Chapter 053: Shocked Audience](#)

[Chapter 054: He Didn't Deserve My Older Sister.](#)

[Chapter 055: Exciting News Burst Out](#)

[Chapter 056: Zhu Bainiao, The Tomb Raider](#)

[Chapter 057: Diamond Membership Card](#)

[Chapter 058: Long Clan's Young Lady](#)

[Chapter 059: Tornado Axe Blocked The Way To Rob](#)

[Chapter 060: Sinister Jiangsu](#)

[Chapter 061: Again Saw That Handsome Young Man](#)

[Chapter 062: A Maiden Jumped Off A Building](#)

[Chapter 063: Distressed Zhu Bainiao](#)

[Chapter 064: Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass](#)

[Chapter 065: Feeling Of Being Strong!](#)

[Chapter 066: Crying Ghost Blade Technique](#)

[Chapter 067: Chicken-Hearted Long Xian](#)

[Chapter 068: One On One](#)

[Chapter 069: Now, Its His Turn.](#)

[Chapter 070: Long Wan'er's Father](#)

[Chapter 071: Enters The Ancient Tomb](#)

[Chapter 072: Inside The Tomb Vestige](#)

[Chapter 073: Pie In The Sky](#)

[Chapter 074: The Body Of Immortal Arteries](#)

[Chapter 075: The Young Girl Wakes Up](#)

[Chapter 076: Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique](#)

[Chapter 077: Crisis Arrives](#)

[Chapter 078: Do You Understand Immortal Technique?](#)

[Chapter 079: Heavenly Sword Tornado](#)

[Chapter 080: Sword Qi's Trembling Cold Light](#)

[Chapter 081: Long Mo'ran's Green Hat](#)

[Chapter 082: Vicious Punks](#)

[Chapter 083: First From The Bottom](#)

[Chapter 084: Long Wan'er Ran Away](#)

[Chapter 085: Zhao Yibei's Death](#)

[Chapter 086: Xiaohua Was Cheated](#)

[Chapter 087: A Punch Throws Someone Down The Building!](#)

[Chapter 088: Xiaohua's Immortal Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 089: A Dead-End](#)

[Chapter 090: Long Wan'er Arrives](#)

[Chapter 091: You Are Him](#)

[Chapter 092: Dare To Love, Dare To Hate](#)

[Chapter 093: Fairy Of The East China Sea](#)

[Chapter 094: Well Done!](#)

[Chapter 095: Ye Clan's Martial Arts](#)

[Chapter 096: Martial Arts Genius](#)

[Chapter 097: Scar's Determination](#)

[Chapter 098: Strange Master](#)

[Chapter 099: Dragon Claw Hand Technique Second Level](#)

[Chapter 100: Commotion At The School Entrance](#)

Chapter 051: Battle Of Words

A confrontation took place at the door of that private room between those 7-8 soldiers and Ye Feng who was still holding Su Menghan's hand. While, the rest of the people were just there watching everything for their enjoyment.

Ye Feng sized up that troop of soldiers standing in front of him blocking his way, he thought that it would be quite easier for him to draw his sword suddenly and kill them all in a flash, but what a pity, he couldn't take this measure.

He turned his gaze towards Liu Lihui, possibly this time, this guy might be able to come into action?

When Liu Lihui saw this, he coughed and suddenly stood up, his potbellied stature was finally in the standing position. Under this situation, he was definitely going to be on the side of Ye Feng.

“Keke, just now whatever happened here, I'm the witness of it!”

Liu Lihui said that while coughing, and then by carrying his heavy potbellied body he stood up: “Little Ye's beating to the military personnel, this thing is completely fictitious, it is completely an act of self-defense. However, the things became big and complicated, all thanks to Xie Clan's kid, isn't your influence in the army also not good?”

It was truly said that 'old ginger was hotter than young ginger' that

meant experience really did matter, suddenly the complexion of Xie Chengye changed, his face immediately paled down because of Liu Lihui's sarcasm.

“Lao Liu, we must not foolishly interfere in this kind of thing for the good.” (Lao = Old)

Xie Pinghui sitting on the side, with a very calm and composed look, said: “But your police system will be in inconvenience to participate in the military thing, right?”

An outbreak of Military conflict in the Chinese country was considered as a very serious matter. The thing that Xie Pinghui just now was obviously a kind of warning to Liu Lihui.

“No, no.”

Liu Lihui certainly was not like the opposite party's general, he patted his big stomach and said with a smile: “Just now, whatever I said was just representing my thought, my identity has nothing to do with this matter. As a matter of fact, Old Xie, the point you raised a moment ago is 100 % correct.”

Xie Pinghui was the party secretary of the North West District in Yanjing city, but was retired now. However, Liu Lihui was little afraid that he could still do something. Moreover, as long as Liu Lihui would stick to Ye Feng, he could take a firm foothold, a trivial Xie Clan's people couldn't be able to do anything to him.

This is an important turning point in Liu Lihui's life!

“Representing the individuals? A very good point.”

Xie Pinghui smiled: “If that's the case, then Chengye we don't have to worry about how to carry out our plan.”

Simply put it like this, if the person were not Liu Lihui or the Chief of Northwest Public Security Sub-Bureau, Xie Pinghui would have completely acted as if he didn't even exist there. But now, since he was already going to represent himself as an individual not like a Chief of Northwest Public Security Sub-Bureau, so they didn't need to worry and give him any respect and importance as well!

Just by listening this, Xie Chengye's face started revealing fierce and sinister look immediately, he fixated his eyes on Ye Feng in anger. Today, he had been slapped by this boy, if he didn't take his revenge, then wouldn't he lose his self-respect completely?

“Wait a minute!”

Seeing that, Liu Lihui strode and came in front of Ye Feng and Su Menghan to block the advancing opposite party and then he poured his gaze at Xie Chengye: “Ye little, you go over there, let me first deal with them! But you have to think about it, even if I represent the individuals, but also at the same time, I am a law-abiding citizen! Soldiers are like the hands of the people, if you dare to do anything to them, then I have plenty of ways to make things big.”

Although Liu Lihui couldn't come up to act as an official to cover Ye Feng , but still he stood in front of him all of a sudden, that was beyond Ye Feng's expectation which made him to do a little appreciation of him. It seemed like, was this fellow a little reliable?

“Then what do you say, how should this matter be resolved? Lets first come to an agreement, this kid didn't give me an apology till now, doesn't he want to get out of here?”

Xie Chengye said that holding a gloomy face. Although Liu Lihui said he was just representing individuals, but his status as the Chief of Northwest Public Security Sub-Bureau couldn't suddenly vanish away, if he returned to his original power, then he knew quite well how to destroy someone by taking a disciplinary action, then the future would be even more uncertain.

“What apology? Damn!”

An angry and commanding voice passed out from the end of the corridor's elevator. Immediately, a group of people wearing suit, carrying choppers in their hands, mostly the gold medalist goons of Heavenly Serpent Gang emerged out. They were headed directly by Scarred face Man who was also holding a chopper in his hand, he was looking very brave, powerful and extraordinarily formidable!

From the other rooms on the corridor, several customers came out and stood on the doorway, watching this scene suddenly they gawked, what situation was this, even the organized crime gang had appeared here as well? This year, what happened, why the organized crime gang was being so rampant, and moreover they were also standing strongly against the soldiers? Wasn't this like courting death?

How to say it again, the organized crime people could never have the influence under the bright daylight, in addition, they couldn't confront with the national army ever. Since, no good result would ever come out in a situation like this.

Xie Chengye had also started to think so, although he was a bit surprised, but didn't care about it.

But when a group of people of Scarred Face Man came forward and started splitting up the doorframe of that private room, then suddenly those soldiers got the reality shock, they now understood that they couldn't underestimate them or consider them as a trivial group of people!

Almost everyone was stunned in that private room, however, Liu Lihui didn't have the time to enjoy their aggression and domineering.

“Who are you guys?”

Liu Lihui's complexion sank, he thought that bringing the choppers to clash with the soldiers, if this matter passed on to the higher authority, then it would be needless to mention that even for his immediate superior, it would become very difficult to protect Scarred Face Man!

On the surface, he certainly couldn't expose his relation with Scarred Face Man, so he could only ask questions from them like he did just now.

Scarred Face Man pulled the corners of his mouth to smile, obviously

he was not a shithead, suddenly he pulled out a document from his bosom: “I, Your Father, am here rightnow, to ensure the security of Jingcheng restaurant, some people are causing trouble here, certainly we have to come forward on the surface to coordinate.”

What?

One group of people were just here trying to simply make noise and chaos, while on the other side, this organized crime gang were exhibiting such a high intelligence quotient?

Xie Chengye’s complexion became more gloomy all of a sudden, he was constantly staring at the knife cut wound which was there on the face of that ferocious Scarred Face Man. He then snorted coldly and pulled out from his bosom, his own military officer card as an evidence.

“Obstruction caused in the military affairs by other personnel has been strictly prohibited!”

After done saying, Xie Chengye raised his chin and bulged out his chest as a symbol of feeling superior, he contemptuously looked at Scarred Face Man and thought, regardless of who the opposite party was , the organized crime gang or small security, the military had the ultimate power to sideline everyone even those who used to say ‘I, Your Father’!

The moment Scarred Face Man listened that, he split the door frame into two parts while pulling out his chopper, and by staring directly at him he said: “Why can only soldiers have the right to act as they please? We, as the security guards, have the prime job to ensure the safety of our customers at all cost, otherwise if by chance someone file a complaint

against us, then our bonus of this month will be held, under such situation will you compensate me?”

“Correct, the security elder brother is stating the truth.”

Liu Lihui standing on one side continued saying: “Obviously, you Xie Clan has rushed over here to make trouble, whatever Little Ye did was just a justifiable act of self-defense, but you guys have blocked the way and not letting him leave. Is this the attitude of our country’s military? I was really so disappointed!”

“I can’t say that.”

Xieping Hui replied to him in a loud tone in that private room, since in the presence of Xie Clan, only he was capable enough to level up with Liu Lihui in this battle of words: “This is our Xie family’s affair, this little boy started hitting our people first, and on top of that also refused to apologize, how can we possibly let him go away?”

“Oh?”

Liu Lihui sneered: “And the ways to apologize are to bark thrice like a dog, slap yourself 100 times and crawl on your knees?”

“What? You insulted our customer, this boy, Jingcheng restaurant doesn’t welcome you, brothers, be prepared to catch up these people!”

Suddenly the anger of Scarred Face Man reached its peak, he waved his hand towards a group of men of Heavenly Serpent Gang to start a unified

action, and so just after getting his signal they instantly flashed out a big row of choppers!

Xie Chengye came over here just to help his elder sister, did he actually know that he would bump into this sort of thing, he brought with himself his military officer card, but didn't have any weapon in the hand, Ah! Since they were currently confronting a row of shining choppers, so several soldiers were feeling diffident all of a sudden.

“Real man can never be at a disadvantage from the outset, were you guys just making fuss from the beginning?”

Many soldiers were having such type of thought, they were looking at each other in blank dismay. They were empty-handed and now they had to confront with choppers, they didn't have that level of guts, the only thing left for them was to retreat, and by using their maximum speed they wanted to run away and ask someone to come and support them!

When Scarred Face Man was about to directly quell this scene, at this time, a large number of people appeared in that corridor out of the blue!

A group of four rows of police, wearing police uniform, from very far blocking the entire corridor from both ends, suddenly showed up. This group was headed by a tall and strong built personnel, having the look of an official, wearing the police uniform along with the first-level commissioner level epaulet, a silver olive branch, composed with three badges along with quadrangular flowers shining, all of them together were demonstrating his status explicitly.

“He is Miao Zhenqiang, the Chief of Yanjing's Public Security

Headquarters!”

Many people exclaimed aloud, nobody had expected that such a big personality would actually show up himself today. Su Menghan, Liu Lihui, Scarred Face Man, Xie Chengye and others, all of them were totally in a state of shock. Ye Feng frowned and thought that wasn't this situation getting more and more complicated?

Chapter 052: Fierce Tiger Transformed Into Sick Cat

Today, Miao Zhenqiang was supposed to be attending the grand feast of Lin Clan's Old man's 70th birthday, but suddenly he received a warning call from Jingcheng restaurant from the opposite side of the road and was informed about the chaotic situation where criminal police was also involved. Therefore, he used his maximum speed to rush over here to tackle the situation.

As soon as he arrived at the incident floor, suddenly his eyes fell on Ye Feng who was stuck at the doorway of that Private room, he secretly sneered at him in his heart and thought that did this kid, who caused so much trouble to Dragon Clan, again dare to cause such a high-profile trouble?

Undoubtedly, this time regardless of the situation, he would surely stand against Ye Feng!

Being the Chief of Yanjing public security Bureau headquarters, or the member of sub-provincial level municipal party committee, in this kind of situation he was obviously going to be deterrent. Merely the sudden appearance of Miao Zhenqiang immediately turned the fuss making incident floor into complete silence.

“Ye Feng, he is Miao Zhenqiang.”

Su Menghan pulled Ye Feng's arm and cautiously said that to him, while doing so, she was being more and more anxious. A character of this

level had appeared there, in the present situation even her dad, Su Xinchang, also had no right to speak.

“Hmmmm, ok.”

Ye Feng squinted his eyes, looked at that middle-aged man of strong-built, wearing a first-level commissioner epaulet. He slightly thought that the current situation had gone beyond his expectation, if not handled with care then it would likely to hurt many people standing in his support like Su Menghan, Scarred Face Man, Liu Lihui and other people.

“Put down your arms and raise your hands!”

At one side of Miao Zhenqiang, one individual who was the Chief of Criminal Police, holding small speakers in his hands, facing the crowd in front of that private room, shouted out loud to alert them.

Seeing that Xie Chengye promptly jumped out and said: “Officer, these people are from underworld, to hold knife with the intention to offend someone is a serious crime, they must be severely punished.”

Miao Zhenqiang listened that and chuckled: “how can the people from military be so coward, can’t they even handle trivial underworld people?”

As soon as Xie Chengye heard that, his half still swollen face suddenly flushed. The relationship between the army and the police was not quite good, so in this kind of situation it was very normal to have a sarcastic encounter between them.

By crossing his hands behind his back to stand comfortably, Miao Zhenqiang was piercingly looking at Ye Feng and in a promiscuous manner he ordered directly: “Action! Catch them rightnow, the people of Organized crime gang as well as that boy wearing casual cloth!”

He knew that recently, Dragon Clan had suffered a great loss in Langfang City once again, seemingly that masked man who committed the crime there in Langfang was somehow related to Ye Feng. But because of the agreement done between Dragon Clan and Ye Feng’s Grandfather, now Dragon Clan couldn’t dare to trouble Ye Feng anyhow, but Miao Zhenqiang did not have this type of concern.

If he took hold of Ye Feng and got success in drawing out some news about that masked man from his mouth, then undoubtedly that would be a great help to Dragon Clan, obviously by doing this he would reap lots of benefits for himself. Being such a high level senior official, he was already quite aware of that hidden world of martial arts, moreover he had been on good terms with Lin Clan as well.

His this order had made this crystal clear among the people present on the scene that this time, who came out victorious and who lost the match!

Xie Chengye together with his group of soldiers had probably won this fight, with full of proud and self-satisfaction he was gazing at Scarred Face Man and his men.

He was feeling slightly uncomfortable in his mind and heart, since he couldn’t succeed in humiliating Ye Feng personally, but as he knew

already that it was impossible for him to take his revenge right now. Meanwhile, he could clearly see, although Miao Zhenqiang ridiculed him, but in fact his this action was aiming directly at Ye Feng. Ye Feng was soon going to be under the police custody, absolutely this thought was making him restless, however, he didn't know how this kid had offended such a high-ranked official?

Xie Min, who was still in that private room, although she didn't see what was going on outside, but after listening to the outside propaganda she could at least guess now. She couldn't help herself from having a malicious thought in her dark heart. While looking at Ye Feng around Su Menghan, she thought as long as Ye Feng didn't return, she would see who was going to protect that young vixen?

On the other side, Xie Pinghui and Su Xinchang, who were still sitting inside that room, they stood up and approached close to the door where Ye Feng and other people were standing.

Su Xinchang was cold sweating, he totally didn't expect that inviting his daughter to dinner, such a trivial situation would evolve into something so big where even provincial and ministerial level officials had arrived at the scene. It seemed to him like, wasn't this guy Ye Feng, not on good terms with Chief Miao? However, if he relied on his identity as the cousin of the boss of trivial Heavenly Serpent Gang, and dared resist the provincial officials, then it would be undoubtedly suicidal for him.

Xie Pinghui was just as surprised as Su Xinchang, but it was a good thing for him. Since, in comparison to his idiot son, Chief Miao could do much more to Ye Feng, already he was eyeing at him, certainly he would bring more miserable fate for him.

He was just waiting for Ye Feng and the trouble making underworld people to be taken away by police, then after he would be able to handle the matter of Xie Clan very properly. He glanced at Su Menghan who was standing beside Ye Feng, and thought to himself that this little vixen was indeed very pretty, perhaps also

Everyone present on the spot was extremely happy because of Chief Miao's order, while on the contrary, there were few people like Scarred Face Man, Liu Lihui and Su Menghan who were worried like hell.

Liu Lihui was perspiring and looking at Ye Feng over and over again, he thought that why was Ye Shao not bringing up into light his relation with Lin Clan hastily? Did he want to wait until he entered the police station once again, was he playing the role of the pig to eat the tiger again?

On the other side, Su Menghan was tightly holding the arm of Ye Feng, a pair of her beautiful shining eyes were exhibiting the color of worry for him. She didn't utter a single word, but still Ye Feng could feel her anxiety and nervousness very well.

There was a fierce look on the face of Scarred Face Man, he was staring at Ye Feng as if his eyes were conveying this message: Ye elder brother, what do we do now. Would you like to fight with them ?

Fight with them!

Ye Feng was somewhat puzzled, this fellow was really a single minded person. He was pondering that in this current situation, very obviously only one thing left to do, that Ye Feng voluntarily got carried off by the

opposite party. However, he must ensure the safety of Scarred Face Man.

He thought so because of two reasons, first was-organized crime people in the police station, was not good to speak about, second was-since Su Menghan would be left alone while she still needed someone very important to protect her here. If all people were taken away then apparently Ye Feng would not feel relieved.

Liu Lihui? Ye Feng didn't believe that this potbellied fellow would really firmly stand at his side once he was carried off by the police.

Ye Feng raised his head and looked towards the end of the corridor, that majestic Miao Zhenqiang was standing there looking at him constantly, coincidentally at that time, both were looking at each other's face. Miao Zhenqiang's face was exposing his secret sneer.

Ye Feng knew fairly well, this fellow was standing at the side of Dragon Clan, definitely he would not easily let him off from his grip. Moreover, several fully-armed police men were positioned close to the doorway of that private room, totally prepared to grab Ye Feng and Scarred Face Man at any cost.

"You stay here, I will be fine since I don't have anything to do with this matter."

Ye Feng tried to comfort Su Menghan by saying that, then he raised his legs to arrive at the front. From his look it appeared like he was very self-poised at that time.

“I advise you, don’t resist, if you try to act recklessly, then must know snipers have been kept on standby.”

Miao Zhenqiang said with a sneer, it was similar to the case where a brave fighter got selected to fight with a fierce tiger.

“Chief Miao , you really command such a huge power and prestige. Was this matter that important, ha-ha, that you needed to assign snipers to handle this situation?”

Just then, a very old spiritual voice passed from behind Miao Zhenqiang, reverberated everywhere across that incident place.

Suddenly Miao Zhenqiang’s body went stiff after hearing that voice, he thought wasn’t that the voice of that Old man? Wasn’t today his 70th birthday feast, unexpectedly had he come here in real?

Everyone’s vision shifted towards Miao Zhenqiang’s behind, they saw an old man indifferently approaching towards them, wearing a light gray Chinese tunic suit, although he was seventy years old still appearing very healthy and tough.

“I’m called Lin, the criminal police handles the case of dangerous criminals, how did you come here

Miao Zhenqiang all of a sudden broke out in a cold sweat, he was thinking that this old man appeared here, there was 80% chance he was here just to protect Ye Feng, right? He had heard alot that Ye Feng’s Grandfather had some relation with Yanjing’s Lin Clan, and now it

appeared like it was pretty close to what he had heard!

In the eyes of people, just few minutes back, this powerful looking majestic Miao Zhenqiang all of a sudden turned into a sick cat from a fierce tiger. For other people like Xie Pinghui, etc, the vibration of the sudden appearance of Lin Clan's Old Man was way bigger than imagination!

Mr. Lin, this Old man, who shrouded in Yanjing's power and influence, actually unexpectedly came? Not to mention, before the sudden arrival of Mr. Lin, Miao Zhenqiang, who was a sub-provincial-level official and was also the state leader, he as well used to address him as "senior"!

Tonight this situation, where flamboyant personality kept on arriving at the incident place one after another, thus finally reached its climax!

Chapter 053: Shocked Audience

Ye Feng raised his head, and looked at the Old man, this was his first meeting with him.

Lin Hongchuan.

Lin Clan's Old man, during the beginning phase of his business, played a very important role in founding his huge business empire. Apart from that, regarding his children, at present he had formed a huge family and was surrounded by lots of children and grandchildren. The power he held in his empire was on tilting side. Although, he was not on any official position now, but no one dared to ignore his influence, not to mention his eldest son was currently one of the central most powerful persons in the today's business world.

Slowly he came out of the elevator, glanced around the corridor in front of him which let all the people present there feel the edge in the back. Every time he took one step, the breath of people was being half beat behind. Except a small number of people, no one knew the reason behind Old Man's sudden appearance over there.

Who among them had the worth to that extent where he was able to attract the attention of such a great person and draw him over there?

“Grandfather, please walk slowly.”

A luxuriously attired youth, wearing a Patek Philippe watch on his

wrist, standing behind Lin's Old man, said that with a smile across his face. Wasn't this guy, Lin Xiuwen, the same person whom Ye Feng had seen last time?

At this time, he was accompanying Lin Hongchuan. Even if he was just a Lin Clan's Sanshao, still his existence as a Lin was more than enough to let the people of Yanjing shudder. Not to mention, right now in front of everyone, Lin's Old Man was also present there along with him, hence Lin's power was kind of doubled. (Sanshao – third son)

Customers of the other rooms were silently standing salute at the doorway. Being able to come to this Jingcheng restaurant to eat meal, obviously it was quite natural that their social status was certainly not low, just a glance was fairly enough for them to instantly recognize the identity of Lin's Old man.

“Little Miao, you got the team now, here I am.”

Lin's Old Man walked up to the side of Miao Zhenqiang and patted his shoulder with a smile.

Miao Zhenqiang had a connection with Long Clan in the martial arts circles while Lin's Old Man had a connection with middle Clan. Both sides were not on a harmonious term. However, the difference between the level of these two sides was way too large, still Miao Zhenqiang couldn't dare to confront him or speak even few words in front of him.

“Got the team!”

After that Miao Zhenqiang did not speak anymore rubbish, he coldly looked towards Ye Feng and then turned around and walked away.

A fierce tiger was tamed by Lin's Old Man and on top of that, it happened so easily in just a tweak. (Fierce tiger = Brave fighter)

Ye Feng was standing still there, remembering the face of Miao Zhenqiang which was very ferocious few minutes ago like a Chinese character, he thought to himself that one day in the future he would certainly point out the color of his look.

Then he turned his head and looked towards Lin's Old man and Lin Xiuwen, he slightly wrinkled his eyebrows and frowned. He never had thought to rely on Lin Clan to solve his any kind of problem, however the opposite party appeared suddenly like this which somewhat stupefied him.

Liu Lihui, who was standing behind Ye Feng, seeing that breathed a sigh of relief finally, he thought that since beginning Little Ye had already done the arrangement in advance with Lin's Old man , unexpectedly he made Lin's Old man to come over here personally, wasn't this really so awesome? This potbellied Chief of Public Security Sub-Bureau also thought that Ye Feng did call Lin Hongchuan to come and rescue him.

As for Su Menghan, she who was still standing beside Ye Feng, was feeling some apprehension. She didn't know the identity of Lin's Old Man, but she had an idea about Lin Xiuwen's identity who was known as Yanjing rich man's son and also as Yanjing's Playboy. However, by judging the surrounding person's response, suddenly she also guessed the status of Lin's Old Man.

She had no idea about what brought Lin's Old Man here, if he also wanted to deal with Ye Feng, then she simply didn't dare to imagine the consequences.

“Step aside, everything is alright okay.”

Ye Feng waved his hand to indicate Scarred Face Man to take hold of their Choppers. As he knew, since Mr. Lin had appeared here, now there was no one who could dare to ask or do anything.

Although reluctantly, but still Ye Feng had to admit, this way many things would be smoothly done or easily solved. Su Xinchang, Xie Clan, Heavenly Serpent Gang now nobody would dare to create any problem to him. Must know, in the eyes of Lin's Old Man, he was his granddaughter's prospective husband! Of course, as for Ye Feng, whether he was ready to admit it or not, it was completely an another matter.

Scarred Face Man was being a bit skeptical, but seeing Ye Feng speaking up and waving towards them, he finally gave an order to all the men of Heavenly Serpent Gang to immediately withdraw and stand behind Ye Feng.

Xie Clan's people along with those soldiers also gathered together, they all were somewhat astounded, by holding a blank and uncertain expression on their faces they were looking at Mr. Lin while approaching gradually towards each other to stay close. Moreover, they were also getting more and more nervous with the passing time second by second. Even a rampant and unkind Xie Min was completely silent at this moment, she didn't dare to make even the least bit of sound.

As Mr. Lin was approaching gradually towards them, simultaneously Ye Feng could feel that the periphery of the atmosphere was changing gradually. No, not just the atmosphere, but also the breath!

Ye Feng looked stern, although at present he didn't know anything about the existence of the God, but still he could sense that everyone around Lin's Old man was breathing vaguely because of his solid personality.

"Not only Lin Hongchuan was there, but there were also other people surrounding him to protect him!"

Ye Feng suddenly realized, no wonder merely two people, Lin Hongchuan and Lin Xiuwen, dared to come close to so many members of the organized crime gang who had choppers in their hands, they were not a bit afraid of any accident that might occur any moment.

Time seemed to have very slowed down, but in fact, it took just a moment for Lin Hongchuan to walk all the way to them.

"Ye Feng? This is our first meeting, do you know who I am?"

Lin Hongchuan stood still at a distance of three meters away from Ye Feng, and by chuckling he softly asked that from him.

"Are you Lin Hongchuan?"

Ye Feng looked at him while being totally stunned!

In short, by letting all the surrounding people completely startled on the spot, this boy unexpectedly dared to address Lin's Old Man by his name, wasn't it like courting his own death?

Moreover, Mr. Lin spoke to him so politely, it sounded like they were old friends, wasn't this so unacceptable and unscientific?

"Hello! Don't think you are the grandson of Grandfather's old friend, how can you be so disrespectful to your elders and superiors!"

Mr. Lin standing at the side of Lin Xiuwen, immediately glared at Ye Feng angrily. He already knew the identity of Ye Feng, but it was quite obvious he didn't pay any attention to that status. At this time, suddenly something hit his mind and he started thinking that this kid, Ye Feng, looked a little familiar, but where had he probably seen him?

"About that, I'm sorry, my Grandfather had introduced you to me like that."

Ye Feng didn't argue with him, without even looking towards Lin Xiuwen, he just gave an explanation directly to Mr. Lin.

"Haha, no worries. Correct, it really is the style of that Old man."

Lin's Old man was not at all angry with Ye Feng, instead he laughed, his eyes were displaying a sign of little praise for him. Had he ever seen such kind of young man for decades? Well, nowadays young people were

very different, whenever they met him, they used to act like they were seeing an emperor. By the appearance of that Lin's Old man it was apparently visible that he truly had a flattering expression on his face for Ye Feng.

Just a simple line of Lin Xiuwen had made Ye Feng's status quite vivid among the people.

This boy Ye Feng was unexpectedly the grandson of the old friend of Mr. Lin! Moreover it appeared quite lucid that the relationship between Mr. Lin and his old friend was considerably good!

The audience were completely astonished!

Su Menghan who was still tightly holding Ye Feng's arm, there was an expression of disbelief suddenly took birth on her face. Was Ye Feng really the biggest supporter of Yanjing's Lin Clan? Truly inconceivable! No wonder, he had always been so self-poised, that was the reason why he used to encounter any kind of situation very calmly.

Su Menghan somewhat discontentedly, slightly pinched him, why he did not tell her this sort of important matter, it was too repugnant.

Scarred Face man still standing respectfully behind Ye Feng, was revealing a look of shock at this time. He thought that Ye Feng, who was originally the real boss of his gang from behind the scene, was he actually having such a good relationship with a great personality Mr. Lin? This was really a bliss, an ecstasy !

He didn't have the desire or expectation to continue growing and expanding Heavenly Serpent Gang, but his heart was filled with a big desire to find out that Swordsman who had wounded his face ten years ago, so that he could take his ultimate revenge from him. Obviously, the more abundant background Ye Feng had, the more favorable situation would be for Scarred Face man in achieving his life's goal.

Chief Liu Lihui of Yanjing Public security Northwest Sub-bureau was extremely excited right now, he was almost about to dance at the scene. This time, he bet right!

However, on the one hand few people were in ecstatic mode, while on the other hand few were in extreme distress.

At one side, Su Xinchang, Xie Pinghui, Xie Chengye, Xie Min, and other people seeing Ye Feng and Lin's Old man talking to each other in so joyous and familiar way, turned them more and more tensed.

Chapter 054: He Didn't Deserve My Older Sister.

Regret was probably the only thing Su Xinchang's heart was feeling at the moment.

He had never thought that Ye Feng could have the relation with Lin Clan unexpectedly. If he had known this already, he would have absolutely maintained the friendly attitude towards him from the outset!

“Actually what is the identity of his grandfather, and unexpectedly he is friends with Lin's Old man”

Su Xinchang had mixed feelings, during his previous survey, how this thing went out of the range of his investigation which he carried out especially to find out every minor detail related to Ye Feng's life? In order to find out the identity of Ye Wentian, he, who was merely a chairman of the ordinary group, wanted to investigate this which was entirely a wishful thinking.

At present, until he completely offended Ye Feng, then only he came to know that unexpectedly he had a connection with Lin Clan! If since beginning he had stood in the favor of Ye Feng and had supported him and Su Menghan, then now did he need to look at what Xie Clan signaling him by winking at him?

Unfortunately, in this world there was no such kind of drugs which could eradicate the so-called 'regret'. Su Xinchang did all this by his own free will, he had no option left than to regret for his misdeed or misfortune.

Each and every person of Xie Clan had a very noticeable facial expression at the moment. their faces were exhibiting very colorful expression because of the ongoing situation.

Originally, they had nothing to do with Ye Feng, they had no connection with him. But coincidentally that happened recently when Su Menghan came together with him. They just wanted to oppose Su Menghan, but that automatically provoked Ye Feng as well.

At this time, deep in their hearts most of them were scared because just a moment ago Xie Min had scolded Su Menghan, now she was also regretting at her own words which was truly of very low standard. Since she had no idea about the strength of the opposite party earlier, that was why she scolded her like that, but the terrifying point which kept the rest of the Xie people including her quite nervous was that wasn't she scolded her very badly in a very shameful manner?

At present Xie Min was incomparably worried in her heart just by thinking that she had caused Ye Feng a lot of trouble. Not to mention a slap across her face, if Ye Feng would wish to hit her again on the present scene, even if he hit her 10 times this time, could she be able to utter a single word against him now?

Simply speaking, Ye Feng had a big supporter now, the great Lin Clan. Just few words of Lin's Old man was capable enough to eradicate the existence of the so-called second class family 'Xie Clan'. They didn't even have any level in comparison to Lin Clan.

All of a sudden the identity proof of the Military officer Xie Chengye fell

down because he saw Lin's Old man shouted loudly at Miao Zhenqiang to immediately withdraw his police group. He knew that, not only Ye Feng wouldn't have forgotten about the slap, but also he would now investigate into their issues!

Xie Pinghui's mood suddenly dropped to the bottom. As a retired official and a very clever old man, only he himself knew about the strength and capabilities of Lin Clan, as well as he also had a very good understanding about the current situation which was really not least a bit favorable for them.

He looked at Ye Feng who was standing in front of him in a very calm and composed form. In his heart he secretly hated this kid for concealing such a big thing so deeply in his heart. Not even an investigation which was jointly carried out together by both Xie Clan and Su Sheng Group could be able to discover his connection with Lin Clan.

"I, Xie Pinghui, respectfully congratulating Lin's Old man for his birthday today, Many happy returns of the day, may God bless you and give you lots of happiness as immense as the Eastern Sea longevity!"

Xie Pinghui stacked the smiling face and took the initiative to wish him his birthday first out of others.

"Well, I am getting old day by day, you young people get back and do what you have to do, ok?"

By raising his hand Lin's Old man said that with the intention to stop Xie Pinghui from further interaction since he wanted to continue talking to him. From his words, everyone implied that he wouldn't hold them responsible for today's action.

All of a sudden his words lifted the burden from their heart. Finally Xie Pinghui together with his Clan and Su Xinchang felt a big relief.

With full of excitement Old Man Lin then looked at Ye Feng as well as Su Menghan who had his arm tightly held in her grip. That view triggered the interest of Old Man Lin, hence he asked from him: “Ye niece, she is your girlfriend, isn’t she? Why are you not introducing her to me?”

The moment Su Menghan heard his words, her face turned red, she blushed hardly, but she didn’t speak anything to oppose him, out of awkwardness she sipped her lips gently, which was making her incomparably lovable and cute.

Su Xinchang who was standing behind them, just for a while thought to jump out to introduce himself as the father of Su Menghan, but in the end he didn’t have the courage to come out and speak in front of him. He thought what would happen if Old man Lin would point out that he asked from Ye Feng, then why did he interfere between them? Speaking carelessly was not at all considered good.

“Ah, yeah, she is my girlfriend, how come you know about it?”

Ye Feng replied to him, then he looked straight into the eyes of Su Xinchang, and thought to himself that pretty soon he would be able to see what would be the reaction of Old man now to his reply.

He might force them to break up, and then he would announce the marriage of his granddaughter with him? If the impression of Lin Clan

was so strong in Yanjiing, then it would be quite normal for the Old man to do so.

However, even if the opposite party would force Ye Feng to break up with her, it would be impossible for him to compromise with the opposite party. Since he had recognized Su Menghan as his girlfriend, so he would never let her go like this in the midway!

“Ha ha, the young girl is extraordinarily beautiful! The love of young people must be treasured well.”

After saying that, Lin Hongchuan didn't speak anything else, he just kept on looking Ye Feng's eyes which was more than a subject of ponder, it was also more than a hint of appreciation.

Lin Hongchuan could see through the hidden meaning behind the look of Ye Feng, he thought Ye Feng could ignore his granddaughter Lin Shiqing, as well as he could also insist to stick together with the girl he liked. This spirit was truly commendable, really it was quite different from other ordinary young men.

Lin Shiqing's fame was resounded all over Yanjing, she was recognized as the perfect goddess in the city Yanjing. Lin Hongchuan thought it was close to impossible that Ye Feng would have not seen Lin Shiqing till now. If for a while lets assume he hadn't seen her, but he must have seen her pictures.

How possibly he knew that Ye Feng was not even least bit interested in his granddaughter, he didn't want to think about it anymore

Lin Hongchuan secretly sighed in his heart, unfortunately if he appreciated Ye Feng for his resolute, then how that old man, Ye Wentian, couldn't be able to think so.

Mr. Lin very clearly knew that Ye Wentian had already recognized his outstanding granddaughter and also wanted to make her the granddaughter-in-law of Ye Clan. Now in this case, even if he was his old friend since many years, but still he couldn't persuade him!

So, at present in front of them the love of these two young people was there, they had no other choice left than to completely rely on fortune

“It is natural – Mr. Lin, were you looking for me, is there any matter?”

Ye Feng noticed that the other party did not mention anything about Lin Shiqing, that was the reason he brought this topic up.

“Well, no, its just happened that you are here, I have come over here to see the old man.....”

Lin Hongchuan showed a faint smile, he wanted to say something to Lin Xiuwen who was standing behind him, but abruptly something hit Lin Xiuwen's mind and all of a sudden he raised his finger and pointed at Ye Feng!

“I remember now, are you that evil guy from the last time?”

Lin Sanshao finally remembered everything, he had seen Ye Feng last

time at the Oushi Antique store! It seemed like, was this guy that one who broke his favorite white Yin Yang fish into pieces?

Lin Hongchuan was completely taken aback for a moment by hearing Lin Xiuwen's words, had Ye Feng and his grandson seen each other already?

“Well?”

Ye Feng quickly looked at him, he did not know why on the earth Lin Sanshao was doing this.

“Wasn't it you who broke that white Ying Yang fish which I had selected especially for my grandfather?”

Lin Xiuwen had an evil look on his face, he was staring at Ye Feng: “Do you even know, that was my own favorite gift?”

“Sorry, I do not know.”

Ye Feng chuckled: “And I was not the one who broke that antique piece, if you want to know who specifically did that, then just go back and ask this from those two attendants of yours.”

“Nonsense, they said that you bumped into them and broke that antique piece, is it wrong?”

Lin Xiuwen's anger suddenly burst out.

“Even if I bumped and broke it, still Uncle Ou had already paid triple compensation to you, what more do you want to be done for that?”

Ye Feng smiled lightly, this boy was really too rampant.

“It’s – ahem – well, forget it.”

Lin Xiuwen also wanted to say something to zip his mouth, but just the thought that Grandfather was still behind him, stopped him, but he wasn’t ready to give up and just let off Ye Feng.

From the beginning he looked up and down several times at Ye Feng, finally he took a step back and said to Lin Hongchuan: “Grandfather, I think this boy doesn’t deserve my older sister. This thing

As the favorite grandson of Lin Hongchuan, Lin Xiuwen knew earlier than others that his grandfather wanted his sister Lin Shiqing to be betrothed to a thing called Ye Feng. But he didn’t expect Ye Feng would actually turn out to be that evil guy from that antique shop.

The moment his words fell in the presence of all, each and every one of them went in a complete shock!

Ye Feng didn’t deserve his older sister?

Wasn’t it like Mr. Lin was fully determined to get his granddaughter betrothed to Ye Feng? Moreover, just now as Lin Xiuwen mentioned about his elder sister who was unmarried, from that it could be concluded that there was only one person who could be said that, and

that was none other than the No. 1 beauty of Yanjing city – Lin Shiqing!

Chapter 055: Exciting News Burst Out

Like a powerful bomb, Lin Xiuwen's words were suddenly thrown into the crowd.

This was the explosive news!

Ye Feng was the first to feel its heat, while at one side Su Menghan was there who was still holding Ye Feng's arm tightly, it was very obvious that those words had set off incomparably mighty waves in her heart, the destructive power of which was not inferior to 12 levels of typhoons!

What? Ye Feng unexpectedly had the entanglement with Miss Lin?

Su Menghan's face suddenly became pale, if it were the case of any other beautiful woman, then she would have a little confidence that she could compete with her. But when the opponent was Lin Shiqing, the case was completely different.

Although Su Menghan was considered as Xiaohua of the Junior High School, but still if she would be compared with the matured and royal elder sister, Lin Shiqing, it would be very tender. Moreover, the other party *i.e.* Miss Lin had an extremely high family background which was way too higher than Su Menghan's family background.

(Xiaohua = the prettiest girl of the School)

"Excuse me, I don't know who your older sister is."

Ye Feng frowned, then he shifted his line of sight towards Lin Hongchuan: “Mr. Lin, if you will excuse me, then may I ask you to take your leave. Thank you for coming here to see me, but I don’t welcome this.”

He said that, ofcourse it was totally meant for Lin Xiuwen, the Sanshao of Lin Clan.

“Haha, this kid is talking nonsense, this thing has not even started yet.”

Lin Hongchuan also gave Lin Xiuwen a glance, he should not have talked about this thing in front of others. But just a moment ago in this Jingcheng Hotel, in front of lots of people, a very crucial and confidential matter slipped out of his mouth.

Unexpectedly just a few minutes ago, this kid, who ran over here following his grandfather, could do such a blunder, just now he proclaimed an important matter in the public, which was a little indiscreet. After doing this kind of thing, could he be able now to take the responsibility and bear the consequences of it?

Old man Lin did not completely deny the words of Lin Xiuwen, but as a result he only tried to play the counter-effect. However, whatever he said now that indicated this matter had just a wee bit consideration, it was the best dealing method of him.

Since Lin Xiuwen noticed that he was being stared by his grandfather, he suddenly realized his mistake, he immediately shut his mouth and did not dare to leave the place.

“Since my nephew Ye said so, I’ll have to say good-bye then.”

Lin Hongchuan spoke that and with his sharp eyes he swept the crowd with a look that whether the hidden meaning of him was clear to everyone or not. Regarding this matter, if the people present there would ever try to speak out about it, Old man Lin would never forgive them !

The young lady of Lin Clan, Lin Shiqinq, she could marry anyone, but this was capable enough to even affect the country’s future political shape in next ten years or twenty years. If this issue would spread out in the public, then it would absolutely become a very sensational topic of discussion throughout the country. That was the reason why Lin Hongchuan didn’t want to make an announcement about her marriage so early.

Most of the people present on the scene were cold sweating, among them Su Xinchang was also one of them who was very tensed, because his daughter Su Menghan was still together with Ye Feng, wouldn’t people say that he had snatched away Lin Clan’s son-in law?

Su Xinchang , who was already in a bad mood, was now more scared than being anxious, and all this happened simply because of Ye Feng’s identity! Now, for him Ye Feng was like an almighty God, if he would get the opportunity to meet him alone, then he would definitely treat him very respectfully without saying anything rubbish to humiliate him.

As Lin Hongchuan turned around, Lin Xiuwen also hastily followed him, he appeared just like a child who after making a mistake used to lowered his head, he didn’t dare to utter even a single word. Before others, Lin Xiuwen was just like the emperor, but in front of Lin Hongchuan, he without any doubt was a good boy.

Even if just a moment ago the thing that happened, it appeared like he accidentally made a mistake, thus making Lin Hongchuan unable to have the heart to blame him or rebuke him.

“Oh, so did I want to get into trouble?”

The deep eyes of Ye Feng was staring at Lin Xiuwen's back, he was meditating quietly. As per his judgement, this Lin Sanshao didn't seem to be so superficially remnant on the surface, then that meant he deliberately said that in front of the crowd.

So many people were present on the scene, even if Lin Hongchuan didn't take guarantee that this rumor wouldn't be spread out tiny bit. But the most essential point was even if those people didn't dare to speak irresponsibly everywhere, but when the time would come, Lin Xiuwen would himself spread the news, and nobody would suspect him.

The thoughts were sinister, deceitful!

Purposely, when this news would be spread out, then Ye Feng would also understand what was it meant for. Since Lin Shiqing was so outstanding, very attractively and had a very splendid appearance, then how possibly the pursuers would be less in number.

Maybe if not tomorrow, but soon enough there would be a pile of admirers of Lin Shiqing who would come looking for Ye Feng to trouble him.

Of course, Ye Feng was all prepared to cope with anything to resist by whatever means available, although he was not at all afraid of those troubles , but in his heart he had something going on regarding Lin Xiuwen's sharp and crafty mind.

“Little girl.”

Ye Feng tilted his head and saw Su Menghan who was pouting, she had a very unhappy appearance and there was not even a trace of smile on her face. He touched her head: “You are thinking about it, I really do not know his older sister.”

“Don't touch me.”

Su Menghan ran to the side and very uncomfortably said: “It is not shameful, you hid the truth from me, it was such a big matter about your connection with Lin Clan but you never told me, you never cared for me

There was no doubt that this little girl started to play temperament.

Ye Feng had never experienced how to deal with such kind of situation, this thing could only bewilder him, he then said: “Well, then how can you be willing to believe me?”

“If Lin Shiqing comes to you, what would you do?”

Very depressingly Su Menghan asked that from him.

“What can I do, I don’t even know her.”

Without hesitation Ye Feng replied that directly.

“Once you see her, you will start liking her.”

Su Menghan lightly groaned.

“How is it possible?”

Ye Feng was dumbfounded, he didn’t know whether to laugh or cry.

“How it is impossible, she is so attractive, her stature is also good, she has a splendid family background, moreover she is the President of the university student council, obviously her management ability would be remarkably strong

Su Menghan started to bring into light various advantages of her future competitor.

“Well, I promise you, even if we bump into each other ever in future, I won’t talk to her, okay?”

Ye Feng was feeling very helpless, he had no option left but to say that, but this little girl started asking again.

“This is you who said that, I haven’t compelled you to say so, right?”

Suddenly a sweet smile appeared in Su Menghan’s face, since the statement of Ye Feng was agreeable to her!

“Of course, it’s the promise of the man , the effective and influential word which is impossible to break.”

Ye Feng assured her.

“Well. I still believe you just once, as you can see, ok.”

So Su Menghan said that, she was finally satisfied with his replies, now no more playing any temperament.

When the surrounding people saw that unexpectedly she had the dare to talk to Ye Feng in such a way, they started sweating out. They were very fortunate since they didn’t know the identity of Ye Feng from the beginning, but now when everything was in the light and everyone knew his identity, even though this little girl was talking to him like this, she was really very arrogant, wasn’t she afraid of Ye Feng?

This is the difference between Su Menghan and the person like Xie Min.

Whether it was the status of Ye Feng or his background, she didn’t care about any such things. What she cared the most was only this person ‘Ye Feng’, if Ye Feng were such type of person who used to break the faith of people after getting power and authority, , then in that case he would

never have become worthy of her.

“What you people are looking at, do you people also want to cause trouble to Ye Shao ?”

Standing behind Ye Feng, Liu Liuhui with full of proud, all of a sudden shouted at the group of people of Xie Clan.

Could it be possible now for Xie Clan and other group of people to say a single word in front of Ye Feng? Until this time, they did not know why Liu Liuhui used to call Ye Feng “Shao”. But now they understood everything, this despicable sinister, this fat man knew everything already since beginning about the connection of Ye Feng!

“That, Ye Shao

(Shao – little)

Xie Min didn't dare to have the slightest bit of arrogance again, with somewhat hesitation she shouted one.

“Ok?”

Both Ye Feng and Su Menghan turned around simultaneously to look at her. That reminded Su Menghan about all sorts of bad things which Xie Min used to do with Su Menghan. But now all of a sudden there was a very fearful expression on her face.

Chapter 056: Zhu Bainiao, The Tomb Raider

Lin Hongchuan left the place along with his grandson, but the shock generated by his presence was not subsided.

“Ye Shao, I owe you an apology.”

Finally Xie Min decided to face Ye Feng, this sarcastic and mean woman finally chose to submit.

Ye Feng looked at her face which was heavily painted with make up, he knew this was perhaps the so-called bullying the weak and fearing the strong thing. In the World of the Immortals he had encountered countless number of such kind of people, he was kind of tired of them.

“I don’t need your apology. If you really want to apologize, then apologize to your Menghan.”

Ye Feng shook his head, then glanced at the side of Su Menghan, and thought that now the time finally came to let this little girl vent her grievances which she had suffered for more than a decade.

“Need not to apologize, whatever relationship was there between us, from now on that doesn’t exist anymore.”

Su Menghan shook her head and said that coldly while facing Xie Min who was standing at the side of Ye Feng. Her will was firm, today in the afternoon, Su Xinchang made his decision to choose Xie Min over Su

Menghan, since then Su Menghan was firm determined to disagree with everything which could pull her back in her family.

Even though the opposite party was willing to apologize to her now, she was not at all willing to accept it. More than ten years of injustice and grievances she had suffered, was it possible that just an apology could make up for everything?

“Menghan

Su Xinchang read his daughter's facial expression and suddenly understood that it was now too late for him to say anything to her in order to plead her. His complexion became somewhat pale.

“So, lets talk about her grandmother, what is the truth behind the car accident that her grandmother had encountered?”

Ye Feng was not a bit interested in the nonsense talks of the opposite party, therefore, he asked the most crucial question straightforwardly.

If he had the time to talk nonsense with the opposite party, he might as well go back to start his cultivation training to level up his strength. He had a very clear understanding that his trump card was neither Lin Clan nor Ye Wentian, but his trump card was his status as a cultivator. As long as his strength would keep on increasing, he would be able to deal with anyone proficiently, even if in the future both Lin and Dragon Clan would jointly conspire against him, he could deal with them as well.

All authorities, in front of the overwhelming strength were like floating

clouds!

Finally, he inquired about the car accident just in order to give Su Menghan a confession.

Unfortunately, this matter was very important, but Xie Min was not ready to acknowledge it even though she was under such kind of terrible situation. Obviously, who would like to spend the rest of his life in the prison because of the instigation of someone!

However, Ye Feng saw her panicking and out of fear she shook her head and said: “Truly speaking, this matter has nothing to do with us, I am not that kind of person, I am not insane to the point.....”

“is it?”

Ye Feng asked that, then he raised his head and looked at those four people Xie Pinghui, Xie Min, Xie Chengye and Su Xinchang. Except Xie Pinghui’s facial expression which was very normal, rest three of them were somewhat nervous and had a doubtful appearance, this made everything clear to Ye Feng.

Since the opposite party stubbornly refused to admit this, so how could Ye Feng pursue to the end. He, as a cultivation practitioner, couldn’t participate in this matter anymore, originally this matter should be handled by the police.

There was still the existence of law in this world, Ye Feng thought to let Su Menghan herself investigate this matter, and in this investigation

process Heavenly Serpent Gang would be there to assist her. There was a possibility that they might uncover the truth of the past.

But if they didn't get any success, then they could only wait for Ye Feng to achieve his five years of cultivation, after that he could use "hypnosis" on Su Xinchang and Xie Min to pull out the truth from them. This was one of the techniques of Immortals which was generally used to deal with the ordinary person to ensure that the opposite party must spit out the truth!

"Then let's go. Scar, come with us."

Ye Feng nodded to Su Menghan, then called Scarred Face man since he wanted to tell him to let his members of Heavenly Serpent Gang assist Su Menghan in investigating the truth behind her grandmother's car accident.

However, when Scarred Face man called his men, at the same time Ye Feng's phone suddenly rang up.

Beep, beep, beep!

He took out his cell phone and saw it was the call of Ou B, so he let Scarred Face man and Su Menghan standing there, and answered the phone.

"Ouge, what's the matter?"

(Note : Ouge = Ou elder brother)

Ye Feng asked that to tease him.

“Its a big matter! Small Bee, come to our antique shop quickly, the tomb raider, Zhu Bainiao, is rightnow in our store

Ou B sounded very excited.

“What?”

As soon as Ye Feng heard that, his complexion immediately changed, and all other feelings from his heart suddenly vanished! His mind instantly returned to that seven pictures of that faintly recognizable form of that long hair and buttocks with ethereal figure. Not long ago, that figure was seen in Shang Dynasty tomb site of Changbai Mountains.

Master, was that you?

Ye Feng looked a little distracted, hastily he shouted down the phone: “I’ll be right there!”

“Hurry up, understand the urgency of the situation, he would rushed back to Changbai Mountains tonight again!”

Ou B urged that hurriedly.

“Well, ok, but try to make him wait for me!”

After finished talking to him, Ye Feng immediately hung up the phone.

“What happened?”

Some doubts cropped up in the mind of Su Menghan, she thought that the facial expression of Ye Feng was exactly the same like he had today in the afternoon. Which matter was making him so worried?

“Suddenly something urgent came up..... right.”

Ye Feng deeply thought for a moment, his look became dignified, and then after a deep ponder he said to Su Menghan and Scarred Face man: “I will leave Yanjing immediately for a while, but I don’t know specifically for how long. Scar and Zhao Yibei will accompany me in this trip, so in order to help Su Menghan in her investigation, make someone from your Heavenly Serpent Gang in charge for this investigation.”

“What?”

Ye Feng’s statement suddenly startled Scarred Face man and he remained mummified for a moment, what was going on?

“I am planning a trip which is far from my home, don’t you think after a week you will die because of that poison, so it would be better for you to follow me.”

Ye Feng looked at him and whispered.

“Yes, I understood.”

Scarred Face man, as one of the three best gang leaders of Yanjing, possessed a very flexible mind, he quickly understood what Ye Feng was trying to say. Definitely there must be any urgent matter which was making Ye Feng go to solve that immediately, moreover this matter didn't look like it occurred in this local area of Yanjing. This matter seemed very tricky as well.

“You want to go far? What about school, as you know very soon the college entrance examination

Su Menghan looked somewhat worried, obviously she wasn't in the favor of Ye Feng's sudden decision. Besides, the relationship between them had just started to develop, she didn't want to separate with Ye Feng so quickly.

“I'm sorry, but this thing is far more important for me than the college entrance examination.”

Ye Feng looked at her face which somewhat disturbed him, since this matter was related to Su Feiying, so it was not possible for him to sit idly.

He was very clear that his feelings for Su Menghan was completely different from his feelings for his master Su Feiying. In case of Su Menghan, he liked her, he was attached to her, he wanted to protect her at any cost. However, for his beautiful female master, Su Feiying, he just admired her, worshiped her, and now under the given situation he was being very worried for her.

In the World of the Immortals, the gap between Ye Feng and Su Feiying was very big, that was why he never dare to reveal his feelings for her that he used to admire. This feeling was still there deep inside his heart.

“Song Hu, I have to go with my younger male cousin immediately for a while, till then i am giving you the authority to manage all the matters related to our gang for temporary period.”

Scarred Face man was vigorous and resolute, he knew Ye Feng used to rush to time, therefore, he immediately elected an individual to deal with all the matters related to Heavenly Serpent Gang for temporary period: “Since you’ve been on my side, so you have this very clear in your mind about how to do the things.”

“Don’t worry big brother.”

A square faced man said in a sinking voice: “We will carry out our all gang matters as usual. In addition, we will ensure the safety of Ms. Ye.”

This man was called Song Hu, whom Ye Feng had seen at Yanjing railway station as the leader of the gang, and was also present on the train as the uncle of that youth in western-style suit. He looked towards Ye Feng and Su Menghan in a very respectful way.

“Well.”

Scarred Face Man said that, then he approached near Song Hu, leaned towards his ear and whispered: “If by any chance we fail to come back at

the beginning of the next month , then you continue with the transaction of that head.”

“Ok, got it.”

Song Hu knew that what he said was about that new drug thing, without hesitation he nodded his head.

“Well, let’s go.”

Ye Feng turned around to walk.

“Ye Feng!”

Su Menghan was standing in-situ, her face was displaying the color of worry and dismay. She had a feeling that this time Ye Feng was going to deal with lots of complicated things which might take place in his trip. So, when he would finally come back from his trip, would there be everything same between them which they had rightnow?

Chapter 057: Diamond Membership Card

Ye Feng's footsteps suddenly stopped since he was called by Su Menghan.

"I will come back as soon as possible."

Ye Feng turned around and smiled while looking at her: "Oh, that's right, Heavenly Serpent Gang will assist you in the investigation of your grandmother's car accident, don't worry, ok?"

He then glanced at Song Hu, the man with square face.

"Ye elder brother, will surely do."

Song Hu answered that in a serious tone, now in the absence of Scarred face man, he was going to be the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang temporarily. It was his responsibility now to make arrangement for this kind of stuff.

"Ok."

Dejectedly Su Menghan nodded her head, her glittering and translucent pair of eyes were twinkling again and again, at last she could no longer hold herself and ran three-steps towards Ye Feng, by completely ignoring the presence of surrounding people who were watching them at the moment, she wrapped her arms around him and tightly hugged him.

Her soft, warm and fragrant body was so attached to the chest of Ye Feng, that it was making him suddenly a bit impulsive, just to stay with her like this all the way to the end, there was no longer the need to recall the World of the Immortals from earlier, right?

But this idea was just a fleeting thought, now at all cost he had to find the whereabouts of Su Feiying. It was simply impossible for him to ignore it.

“In fact, it’s not a big deal, in these days you live like a good person.”

Ye Feng patted her shoulder, his soft and gentle words were meant to comfort her, he then loosened his hand, finally stared at her delicate face and saved her appearance firmly in his heart.

He then turned around to leave, while she eagerly raised her head to look him going away.

“Rest assured, he is not like the ordinary person, nothing will happen.”

Scarred Face man was standing at one side, his incomparably violent looking face was showing a smiling expression at the moment, he said that to Su Menghan and then trotted to keep up with Ye Feng.

Zhao Yibei was waiting for them outside the restaurant, they went downstairs directly. But the people in that floor were looking at the back of Ye Feng and Scarred Face Man while they were leaving, they were also being somewhat perplexed.

How did he suddenly leave the place , why didn't he take Su Menghan along with him?

Su Xinchang immediately ran up to her and asked: "Menghan, what happened?"

"It has nothing to do with you."

As soon as Su Menghan heard his voice, she coldly replied to him.

"Ms. Ye, we are sending you home."

Squared face man, Song Hu who was in a western-style suit, saw Su Xinchang running over to Su Menghan, the moment he saw him approaching, he took the initiative on his own and blocked him in front of her, so that the opposite party couldn't approach to her.

He tilted his head and looked at Ye Feng and Scarred Face man leaving, his eyes were flashing strangely.

"Ok....."

Su Menghan nodded, now that Ye Feng had left the place, she was now no longer interested in seeing Su Xinchang or any other people, when she had such kind of thought going on in her mind , exactly then the man from Heavenly Serpent Gang took initiative and protected her.

At present she was more likely to trust that person from Heavenly Serpent Gang than any other people, because she had gone through lots of inferior social dealings before, Heavenly Serpent Gang had been very obedient and respectful before Ye Feng. It could be said again that Ye Feng was not only the cousin of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but had also a relation with Lin Clan. Therefore, she had a belief that no one would dare to offend Ye Feng after being aware of his status.

Song Hu waved towards his men to collect their choppers and escort Su Menghan in leaving the corridor.

Su Xinchang's mouth moved but at last he couldn't bring himself to say anything to her.

“Brother Su, ah, I'll go first.”

Smilingly Liu Liuhui came forward and patted the shoulder Su Xinchang and then he left the place as well. Although he didn't know what was the urgent matter Ye Feng had, but he believed that his today's performance must be saved in the mind of Ye Feng.

Undoubtedly, it was very wise to play a good relationship with someone like Ye Feng who possessed such a high status!

In-situ only a group of Xie Clan's people left, Su Xinchang was standing over there all depressed, tonight the appearance of Mr. Lin brought a very tremendous pressure on them.

“Xinchang, about this matter, I have no other option left than to say

that you will have to suffer a big loss.”

Xie Pinghui stood up, coughed and said that Su Xinchang.

“Besides, you didn’t even make clear to use about the background of the other party, ……….”

Xie Min also jumped out suddenly, pointed at Su Xinchang and shouted at him.

“Should this thing be blamed on me?”

At this time, Su Xinchang was a bit upset, unexpectedly he was being scolded by “that person who was on his side”, obviously it could be imagined how unhappy he would be because of this.

“That’s natural.”

Xie Pinghui said sternly: “No matter how, but this time we have offended Yanjing’s Lin Clan, therefore perhaps the sacrifice should be putting out some of the shares of Su Sheng Group ……….”

As his words came out, Su Xinchang instantly understood the meaning of the opposite party and his face suddenly clouded over.

The hidden meaning behind Xie Pinghui’s statement was Su Xinchang must sell some of the shares of Su Sheng Group to Lin Clan at low prices! Naturally these shares should be taken out from the hands of Su

Xinchang. No matter which side Su Sheng Group was, but many of its channels were under the control of Xie Clan. Hence, regarding such request, fundamentally Su Xinchang had no leeway to refuse it.

For Xie Clan , this company, Su Sheng Group, was just a part of its industries, but for Su Xinchang it was actually everything. He had very limited shares in his hand, selling his shares to Lin Clan meant completely losing his power and influence from Su Sheng Group.

In short, it meant both his social status and wealth would plummet!

.....

Ye Feng and Scarred face man went downstairs together, there in the hotel lobby they ran into the lobby manager of Jingcheng Restaurant.

He was a fairly young man, having a very gentle appearance, wearing a pair of thin-framed eyeglasses and a western-style suit and tie. His shoulders were little shivering out of fear.

He was the one who just happened to report the big boss of Jingcheng restaurant about all these matters, but even the big boss did not dare to come forward. It could be imagined that the troubles they caused tonight, how frightful their status would be for others.

Moreover, just a moment ago a big group of police came walking in and then they left the restaurant, that wasn't for a show, right? There were lots of people from organized crime world but not a single one of them was caught by the police, did the cops just show up to eat meal?

The Lobby manager was very depressed in his heart, but he didn't dare to say anything. Especially when he saw both Scarred face man and Ye Feng got down together, and he had to stack a smiling face immediately to welcome them, that really gave a more depressing feeling to him.

“Gentlemen, please wait for a moment

He stopped in front of Ye Feng to block him, and said that very politely.

“What's the matter?”

Ye Feng frowned, now that Zhu Bainiao, the tomb raider was there in Oushi Antique Store, he did not want to waste a single second on frivolous things.

“Its nothing, get out of our way.”

Scarred face man couldn't stay so polite like Ye Feng, his face suddenly became ferocious and he roared one fiercely.

Seeing that, the lobby manager couldn't bear but retreated two steps in fear, he lifted his hand to wipe the sweat appeared on his forehead, and then he explained: “Our restaurant is now preparing the Diamond Membership Card for you Mr. Ye, later you can hit the discount in total expense of this restaurant

“Sorry, no time to wait for you.”

After saying those few words to him, Ye Feng quickly raised his legs to walk towards the door.

“Wait, wait, Mr. Ye

That greatly startled the lobby manager, who exactly was this young man? Jingcheng restaurant was regarded as one of the top few best restaurants of Yanging. However, giving him the Diamond Membership Card still he was not a bit interested , didn't he really want it?

“If you really want to give the card, then give it to the girl who is coming behind us.”

Ye Feng was totally disinclined to pay attention to him, he just turned around and saw Su Menghan along with Song Hu was getting out of elevator, so he said that to him.

“This.....”

Lobby manager somewhat hesitated. But the boss had ordered him to hand over the card to the youth, if not done like he had been ordered, his position as the lobby manager would be certainly at stake.

“You have to give it to Ms. Ye, there she is, what are you waiting for?”

Scarred face man shouted at the opposite party just to make it seem like he randomly yelled at him, but actually his intention was something else,

he tried to point out the identity of Su Menghan by doing so, after that he left the restaurant with Ye Feng.

Lobby manager understood everything very clearly that this pure beauty in front of them was the girlfriend of this young man!

There were limited number of people throughout Yanjing who had the Diamond Membership Card of Jingcheng restaurant.

When Su Menghan got that embedded small Diamond Membership Card, she remained startled for few seconds. Even her father, Su Xinchang, was just a silver member of this Jingcheng restaurant, which was several grades below diamond members!

She suddenly felt that the gap between her and Ye Feng was extremely huge

Chapter 058: Long Clan's Young Lady

Ye Feng left the hotel, eventually he gave a call to Ou B requesting him to hold the tomb raider firmly for some time more. Meanwhile Zhao Yibei also drove him back to 'Qingfeng park'.

There he changed his clothes with the fastest speed, and before he disguised himself as Mo Jiuge he took his mask and hid it in his arms, after that he got engaged in packing up his stuffs one by one, at last he went out of the villa and again got in the car BMW.

“Oh by the way, can you be able to arrange a SUV (Sport Utility Vehicle)?”

(Note : here Ye Feng meant to say-to arrange an 'off road vehicle'.)

As soon as Ye Feng got in the car, he asked that immediately.

“Of course, Ye elder brother

Scarred Face Man nodded his head and said that in a boorish and uncouth manner.

“Ok?”

Ye Feng cautiously glanced at Scarred Face Man and Zhao Yibei. Usually, Scar didn't use to call him 'Ye elder brother ' in front of the gang members of Heavenly Serpent Gang, because in front of them Ye Feng

was his younger male cousin. But at present what happened to him, calling him ‘Ye elder brother’ in front of Zhao Yibei?

“Relax Ye elder brother, Zhao Yibei is my nephew who has come from my countryside, he knows everything already that you’re not my cousin.”

With a little embarrassment Scarred Face Man placed a very difficult explanation in front of him while scratching his head.

“Hmmm, Ok.”

Ye Feng nodded slowly: “It’s just that something crossed my mind, that no one will believe this thing that I am your younger male cousin. Anyway, drive, and by the way while informing your men to prepare a long-distance off-road vehicle, must tell them that this time we have to go a bit far. ”

The road near Changbai Mountains must be very difficult to walk, a BMW car couldn’t be suitable for that road, hence to arrange a SUV ‘off road vehicle’ had become a necessity for them.

Oushi Antique Store was not very far from Qingfeng park, although it was already dark outside, but since Zhao Yibei’s driving skill was of top class, he didn’t waste much time on the road. Very soon the BMW car arrived and stopped not far away from the store.

“You wait in the car, I’ll be right back.”

Ye Feng set out to get off the car, then he went straightly towards the

entrance of Oushi Antique Store under the roadside lights.

At this time Oushi Antique Store was brightly illuminated, but it didn't use to do business during this time. From far away Ye Feng saw Ou B standing at the entrance, it seemed like he was waiting for someone very anxiously, his white hair was appearing very conspicuous under the light.

“Ouge, I'm here finally.”

Ye Feng smiled and from very far he said hello to Ou B while facing him, he always felt so carefree around him, because they were not only very good friends but were also like close brothers.

“Crap, Small Bee you are too slow. Quickly get inside, my father is just having a formal chat with that guy right now.”

Ou B saw Ye Feng coming under the streetlight, he quickly greeted him as well, and when Ye Feng approached close to him then he whispered: “That guy wants to borrow money, if you have money, then that all said.....”

“Thank you.”

Ye Feng nodded his head and showed his gratitude to him, it was his sincere thanks to him. In the World of the Immortals, besides his beautiful female master Su Feiying, who else was there to help him?

He always felt that care and attachment from Ou B as well as from his father, naturally a very good and favorable impression of them had been

imprinted in his heart.

“Thank you younger sister, now go faster, will you?”

Ou B said that in order to contempt him for being slow, then he turned his head and looked at the parked BMW car, he knew that recently Ye Feng had really changed a lot terrifically, just to come here he used BMW which was quite surprising. However, in that case, there was no need to worry about the money that he might lend to that thief.

He said that but didn't go along with Ye Feng because when his father used to discuss official business in the hall, then during that time it was Ou B's responsibility to take care of the lobby. Although the stuffs of the lobby were not as valuable as the stuffs present in the hall, but if they all were put together, they could also form a big wealth, hence it was not affordable for them to neglect those stuffs.

When Ye Feng entered in the hall all alone, he saw near the display window Ou A and a thin and small man was arguing over something, the situation sounded very intense at the moment.

“Uncle Ou, I came.”

Ye Feng quickly greeted him and then began to take a look of that thin and small man, he saw the opposite party was in a dark blue colored good conditioned cloths, was appearing a bit old, had a pair of shifty-eyes, compared to that crafty thin man from the last time in that trade fair organized by Dragon Clan, he was way too inferior and insignificant than him, that crafty thin man.

Is this that tomb raider, Zhu Bainiao?

He looked closely at him and noticed the vision of opposite party was actually revealing a clear and agile look, his gesture was smooth and natural, his personality was emitting a faint trace of a special kind of charm which was imposing Ye Feng to imply that this man was far from an ordinary man!

“Little Feng? Come, its just fine. By the way, this is Zhu Bainiao, he is immediately going to Changbai Mountains

When Ou A saw Ye Feng there, something flashed in his mind, and immediately he wanted to introduce him to that man.

“Slow.”

But Zhu Bainiao raised his hand to prevent Ou A from moving toward Ye Feng to continue their chat, he then tilted his head toward Ye Feng and looked at him, his eyeballs were spinning around and around.

His voice was a little incisive, but it was not coarse, it could be said it sounded very sharp, very offensive, it was like just his voice was capable enough to making people feel the danger naturally.

“You are called Ye Feng?”

Soon, Zhu Bainiao remained startled, he recognized the identity of Ye Feng quite unexpectedly.

“Yes, it’s me.”

Ye Feng thought to himself that this guy was definitely from the World of the Martial Arts of China, since he recognized his status as the grandson of Ye Wentian. It was quite obvious that in this world, Ye Feng was not so famous that anyone could recognize him like this.

“However, what is my identity is not important, isn’t it?”

He then continue with a smile : “What important is that I can help you, you can help me.”

“I need 10 million, can you give me?”

Zhu Bainiao said that and smiled softly.

“No problem.”

Ye Feng also replied to him with a soft smile: “But the premise is, you have to take me to the place you visited last time, the tomb site of Changbai Mountains.”

He had no idea that whether Heavenly Serpent Gang had that large number of liquid cash available at the disposal or not, however, there was huge cash in that small warehouse of Tianhua Casino, ten million were sufficient, he would let Scarred Face Man took ten million for him, it wouldn’t make any difference.

The point is that the value of ten million must be spent properly!

“Tomb? ”

Zhu birds gawked: “You want to go to Changbai Mountain not for the ‘telepathic grass’?”

“No.”

Ye Feng scowled, although he did not know what that ‘telepathic grass’ was, but he was too lazy to think about it. He just wanted to go to the tomb site of the Shang Dynasty in Changbai Mountain, just in order to explore a trace of Su Feiying.

“Then what are you going to do in the tomb?”

Zhu Bainiao asked that by being somewhat vigilant.

“I didn’t ask ask you that what do you want to do with 10 million, therefore doesn’t it seem like I have no obligation to answer your question?”

Ye Feng asked back with a smile, then said: “Certainly, you can feel relieved since I don’t know anything about that ‘telepathic grass’ thing. Whichever place you’ll go, I’ll keep on following you, but you must enter the tomb with me, I need you to guide me.”

The thin and small face of Zhu Bainiao frowned, he pondered for a moment, finally he nodded slowly and said : “Okay, it’s a deal.”

Although tomb was very dangerous place to go, but depending on his experience, he could lead Ye Feng nicely, it wouldn’t be a problem for him. In order to earn a huge amount of money in a very short time, it was quite obvious that it was impossible to do that without taking any risk, he already had a feeling about this.

“But let me remind you something.”

Zhu Bainiao thought for a second, then while looking at Ye Feng enthusiastically, he said: “I heard that last time there was a masked man who caused trouble at the trade fare organized by Dragon Clan, do you have any kind of relation with that guy? Since, nowadays there is no peace around Changbai Mountains, Dragon Clan’s people use to go a lot there, including that Young lady of Dragon Clan once you set your foot out of Yanjing, no one can guarantee your security. ”

“You need not to worry about that.”

Ye Feng lightly humed, he wanted to find Su Feiying at all cost, his determination to find her was way too bigger than anything else, even bigger than the most dangerous situation. So, he must move forward courageously: “Well, when should we start our journey?”

Some random stuffs suddenly started hitting his mind, his mind started thinking about something like what if he would run into Long Wan’er again this time? As soon as he recalled the name of Long Wan’er, suddenly the thought of her kicking his legs flashed in his mind and he

felt a slight pain in his chest. At the same time her hot plentiful stature naturally reappeared in his mind, her white and shiny skin was still fresh in his memory. All these thoughts were frequently pulling up his heartstrings.

Luckily he had his mask prepared beforehand, if he bumped into her, he could be able to tease her

Chapter 059: Tornado Axe Blocked The Way To Rob

Zhu Bainiao listened to Ye Feng inquiring about the appropriate time to leave, then he expressed his view that as soon as 10 million money would arrive, they could immediately set off together, like said -the sooner the better.

Therefore, Ye Feng gave a call to Scarred face man: “Scar, I am in urgent need of 10 million, when will it be ready?”

He didn't ask that whether he could be able to prepare it or not, he directly asked the time he would need to arrange the money, he believed that for a gang like Heavenly Serpent Gang which was one of the Top three big Gangs of Yanjing, arranging 10 million money would definitely not be a major problem for them.

When Scarred face man heard 10 million, he was taken aback : “Ye elder brother, 10 million is not a small amount but if you really want it, then we will try to quickly arrange such a big amount, but as a result, some of the security company's business of Heavenly Serpent Gang will certainly be affected.”

“Then?”

Ye Feng did not say much, but asked one lightly.

“This since Ye elder brother have commanded, so we will immediately act accordingly.”

Scarred face man noticed that he sounded a bit angry, so he complied hastily.

Ye Feng hung up the phone, he certainly knew that what was running in the mind of Scar face man currently. Although, at present Scar seemed to obey him probably very much, but it was built on a precondition that he was still under the effect of poison, and also someday Ye Feng could teach him martial arts.

However, the thing about teaching him martial arts had never been guaranteed by Ye Feng, therefore Scar just wanted to tell Ye Feng that he had made a big sacrifice only for the sake of Ye Feng, thus he hoped that Ye Feng would certainly consider the sacrifices done by him, and could keep his commitment by teaching him martial arts.

“Unfortunately, I don’t know anything about what’s this martial arts all about, as well as ordinary people can’t learn cultivation

Since beginning Ye Feng knew that Scarred Face man was doomed to be disappointed. However, as a compensation, Ye Feng would definitely help him finding that Visitor ‘Swordsman’ from ten years ago, this way he would actually help Scar in taking his revenge. Ye Feng would never let the help and support of the opposite party go in vain, but lately he had been little busy with his own issues.

While waiting, Zhu Bainiao went to one side and sat down with his eyes closed, and on the other side Ye Feng was still standing and having a conversation with Ou A.

There was a very harmonious relationship between those two, they were discussing something happily, finally Ou A said something to him with a smile: "Little Ye, I know your identity is a bit special. If in future my son little Ou gets into any difficulties, I hope that would you take care of him then?"

"That's natural. Someone told me once, how I treat others, the same way they would treat me, Uncle Ou has helped me a lot so far, I would absolutely never dare to forget that."

Ye Feng looked firm while he was saying that, whether it was for him to repay three times the compensation, or about that Lingshi, or the invitation letter to the trade fair of Dragon clan, he had owed the sentiment of opposite party.

When outside Scarred face man was busy arranging everything, at the same time Ou A confessed everything carefully to Ye Feng, and then Ye Feng took his leave along with the other person, Zhu Bainiao.

Zhu Bainiao was the patron of Oushi Antique Store, as the frequent antique supplier for Ou A's store, he certainly was on good terms with him. However, if not for Ye Feng, it was impossible for Ou A to put out 10 million to lend to Zhu Bainiao.

Perhaps 10 million was not a big deal for Yanjing's Lin Clan, such type of powerful influence they had. However, it was obviously a huge sum of money for over 99 percent of the world's people.

"Small bee, when will you come back? Do you want me to take a leave of absence for you from school?"

Just before leaving, Ou B who was also concerned about him, asked that.

“When I will come back, I really don’t know.”

Ye Feng smile: “But still troubling you, please help me in requesting a leave on my behalf.”

“Definitely make your family Su Menghan help you ask for leave.”

Ou B laughed and teased him by saying that sentence, his voice didn’t have any other emotions actually. He was very happy for Ye Feng and Su Menghan, he felt that it was a good thing, he was giving his sincere congratulations to them from the bottom of his heart.

Of course, when he would go to school tomorrow and would hear the rumors spread everywhere, then this thing would immediately change his attitude.

What? Could it be like this unexpectedly? Ye Feng was simply a real beast!

Unfortunately, till that time Ye Feng would have been disappeared, even making a phone call to him would become difficult he couldn’t even get through him by the phone.

.....

A black Hummer H2 picked up the speed and left Yanjing at the same night, it was running in Beijing-Shenyang highway and was moving towards northeast in a very fast speed.

From Yanjing to Changbai Mountain, the next foothold was in Linjiang City, there was more than 1000 kilometers of distance. They hastily started their journey at the same night. By using the driving skills of both the men, Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei, they could probably be able to make through it till the dawn.

Both the men were driving alternatively so as to ensure the safety during the night. This car was not suitable to run a long distance since the fuel consumption was too high. But just because of Scarred face man's words, man from Heavenly Serpent Gang arranged this car to maintain the reputation of his boss. However, this car was very suitable for the loading force, and also it could be used to avoid lots of unnecessary troubles. Anyway, it had a spare fuel tank as well, there was no need to worry about the problem of fuel consumption.

Regarding this, Ye Feng did not say anything, since he didn't have any idea about the cars, as long as it could be able to reach the destination as soon as possible on the line.

On the way, Ye Feng and Zhu Bainiao were sitting in an adjacent positions, so that from time to time they could talk to one another. During the journey, Ye Feng made a veiled attack by placing the matter of that seven pictures in front of him, but this dreadful fellow Zhu Bainiao was tight-lipped, he didn't disclose any useful news.

A night without words, on the same day when the day was little bright, the black aggressive Hummer picked up a high-speed, and from 201 National highway it arrived all the way to 303 provincial highway, leading to Linjiang city.

Linjiang city was located in the eastern part of Jilin Province together with North Korea country across the river, the river valley was surrounded by four remote villages.

If it was to go on a trip to Changbai Mountain scenic spot, the foothold should definitely be in the Songjiang Town, Baihe Town, *etc.* which were in the northern side of the place. But Zhu Bainiao went to the tomb relics recently by passing through Linjiang city.

Shortly after five o'clock, it was time when the light began to appear, it was the dawn finally. Hummer H2 was running at its maximum speed on the provincial road since no one was there in the way. It was running under the mountains accompanied by little loneliness.

Far away, a motorcycle suddenly appeared on the road ahead, it looked from its appearance that something had gone bad with it, moreover it was also parked on the roadside. A bare-chested vigorous and healthy man was standing there next to that robust motorcycle. He was making an effort to kick the motorcycle, from his look it seemed like he was in an extremely angry mood.

Indeed, the motorcycle, which was parked on the road, was out of order, which was creating a very irritating situation for that man. Originally Ye Feng didn't pay attention, but when he approached close to him, he suddenly found that the man with that motorcycle seemed a bit familiar.

Tornado axe!

In Langfang city, at the trade fair of Dragon Clan, Ye Feng was the one who had killed his accomplice, that greedy Wolf Sword, by his own sword. Actually, he never had thought that , he would come to see this guy in a place like this, moreover the opposite party seemed to be very unlucky at the moment.

Ye Feng was not worried that the opposite party would recognize him, because last time when Tornado Axe saw him, at that time Ye Feng was in his mask.

“Stop!”

When Hummer H2 approached close, then suddenly that ferocious looking Tornado Axe jumped in the middle of the road and waved Zhao Yibei to stop the car. Jiangsu Duo’s double edged sword had always been very ferocious and vicious, although one of them was dead now, but alone Tornado Axe was capable enough to make many great figure of the martial arts world tremble with fear.

Ye Feng thought that did this man Tornado Axe come here just to obtain that “telepathic grass”?

The road was not wide, therefore, Zhao Yibei couldn’t hit the road directly. Ofcourse, he stepped on the brake ahead of time. At first he also thought that the man in front of them was just an ordinary passer-by, whose motorcycle broke down so he was standing there to get a lift, but quickly he remained startled.

The fierce and fearful personality of Tornado Axe was sufficient to shook the heart of Zhao Yibei, his face was also appearing very violent, he opened the door of Hummer's driver seat and said: "If you guys don't want to die, then you all people get out of the car instantly!"

That threat suddenly petrified Zhao Yibei as well as Scarred face man, was this guy blocking their way to do highway robbery? Or it was just to snatch away the great Hummer? Although this guy looked very fierce and dangerous, however there were four people in the car, moreover all were men!

Both Ye Feng and Zhu Bainiao looked at each other, apparently they had recognized the identity of Tornado Axe.

Chapter 060: Sinister Jiangsu

Ye Feng didn't move a bit as he didn't want to expose his strength in front of outsiders. Moreover, Zhu Bainiao was also there, since he was a tomb raider so he must be one of the natives of martial arts world of China. Therefore, Ye Feng was kind of curious to have a look at his strength.

And also a clash with Tornado Axe was completely inevitable.

Suddenly Scarred face man took up a chopper from the seat and jumped out of the car, by passing through the front he walked towards Tornado Axe and while swearing he said: "Fuck, under this broad daylight you blocked our way to rob us, your this idiotic courage is not a small thing."

As the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, normally in Yanjing who hadn't awed seeing his fury? Unexpectedly now, someone really dared to block his way to rob his beloved Hummer H2, how couldn't he get angry?

Scarred face man moved swiftly, and before Ye Feng could do something to stop him, he already had jumped out of the car to go towards Tornado Axe.

On the face of Tornado Axe, ugly and ferocious-looking expression suddenly piled up. He snorted contemptuously by seeing that someone had really gotten the courage to get out of the car to revolt against him. As a martial arts user, how possibly he could fear from this underworld boss?

Five years of cultivation was making him so domineering and tyrannical in the common custom. At present, there were four people in the car but still he hadn't paid attention to them. Neither he saw Ye Feng nor Zhu Bainiao by now, he just had a perception that there would be certainly ordinary people in the car.

Scarred face man thought that they were encountering such kind of problem but still there was no need to involve Ye Feng into this, consequently he thought to attack decisively. Just in two seconds he passed the front side of the car and by holding the chopper in his hand he directly attacked on Tornado Axe to cut him down!

It was just that he merely wanted to scare the counterparty and make him retreat before difficulties. However, unfortunately Tornado Axe was more ruthless than him. Seeing this attack, he promptly curled his fist and started condensing his Qi crazily, and in an instant from one side he rumbled one after another several hits on one side of chopper. As a result, his strike easily made that chopper fly and fall to the ground!

However, to one's surprise, Scarred face man didn't respond a bit, rather he let go the shining chopper from his hand, "Clang" and with a sound it fell on the roadside.

But in a couple of seconds he wide opened his mouth, he thought to himself that how could this guy be so fierce, wasn't this situation just like the previous time when Ye Feng had almost knocked his pistol out of his hand during their first meeting? Could it be that this guy was also a martial arts user?

“Don’t move.”

At this moment, Zhao Yibei suddenly coldly said that from the driver’s seat, simultaneously he pulled out a pistol to aim at the head of Tornado Axe!

The point that he could pull out the pistol was not at all the strange thing. It must be Scarred face man who would have instructed him to bring a pistol along with him and hide it in the car properly. Then after driver seat’s door got opened just to do the inspection of the road and simultaneously to scare the opposite party.

Tornado Axe’s eyes fell on Zhao Yibei’s hand, and he noticed the gun which completely stunned his mind.

Gun?

Obviously, his motion was nothing as compared to Ye Feng’s agility which was very flamboyant and had also reached such an extent where he could easily dodge the bullets. Seeing the pistol Tornado Axe gawked, apparently he was looking all scared.

Ye Feng saw that and felt relief, but he slightly regretted and looked at the side of Zhu Bainiao while thinking that just now he lost a very good opportunity to see this guy in action.

Zhu Bainiao also gazed at him at the same time, it seemed like as if he knew that Ye Feng was thinking something, he gave a soft smile but didn’t speak anything.

“You are thinking about robbing our Hummer, it’s totally a crazy thought, don’t you think?”

Zhao Yibei had been following Scar for many years, that was why his share of aggressiveness at such a crucial time like this was also quite obvious. Although in general he was like a adorable young fellow, but during the critical moment he couldn’t be unambiguous.

“Withdraw, and stand by the side of the road.”

Zhao Yibei raised his pistol and vigilantly looked at Tornado Axe.

Hearing that, the corners of the mouth of Tornado Axe wriggled a bit, he raised his hand to indicate that he had surrendered, at the same time he lifted his right foot and thought to draw back.

However, at the same time this evil and sinister man of Jiangsu Duo actually abruptly came into action and with a extremely high speed he pounded a punch towards Zhao Yibei! As a user of martial arts, this punch didn’t prove any disgrace on his status. One after another he kept on hitting heavily on the wrist of Zhao Yibei, simultaneously he changed his boxing palm and snatched away that pistol from his hand!

This sudden change in the scene let Ye Feng fail to react, not to mention even Scarred face man didn’t react because of the suddenness of the event.

“Brat, you dare to point a gun on me, seems like you are tired of living

.....”

Tornado Axe maliciously smiled and then pointed his pistol at Zhao Yibei's head backhandedly, without any hesitation he was all prepared to open fire!

For him killing people was not a big deal. As long as no one from martial arts circle could attain any evidence against him, it would be impossible for anyone to take hold of him for his act. In other words, once he made his mind to come into action, then without any exception he used to finish each and every one present on the scene!

Ye Feng's heart skipped a bit, how could he afford to let his people die at a time like this when he hadn't arrived at the destination yet? Unfortunately, he was still sitting in the back row of the car, although he wanted to rush out of the car and go over there to help them but was unable since radically he hadn't have enough time!

He somewhat regretted in his heart, if he had known this earlier that something like this might happen, then he wouldn't have waited for Zhu Bainiao to tackle this situation. What if now Zhao Yibei were killed

Shua! Shua!

Just then, sound of two weapons piercing the air echoed everywhere.

Clang! Bang! Puff!

Three consecutive different sounds fell into the ears of Ye Feng.

Actually in this fleeting moment he didn't understand that where did these two flying blades come from and hit the pistol which was in Tornado Axe's hand. The first blade hit the pistol, as a result, Tornado Axe quickly responded to that and started firing rapidly, actually he started firing crookedly on the glass of car's window. However, the second flying blade which was aimed at Tornado Axe's throat, all of a sudden it went straight towards him and in a blink of eye it cut through the throat of him.

With a clatter, pistol dropped on the ground.

Tornado Axe turned his head and with his two prominent eyes he looked at Zhu Bainiao who was sitting in the back row of the car, he pointed out his finger at him in order to say something, but before he could say, he died.

Just in a moment fresh blood from his throat started gushing out and it spread all over the ground.

“There is a bridge in front of us, how should you guys process this further, it doesn't need me to say, does it?”

Zhu Bainiao said that in a very aggressive and offensive tone from one side, and then he looked at the corpse of Tornado Axe lying on the ground and said: “He brought about his own destruction, no wonder.”

Hidden Weapon Technique!

Ye Feng reacted quickly and came back to his senses all of a sudden, he

then thought that this man Zhu Bainiao was unexpectedly the legendary master of Hidden Weapon Technique! He didn't know how many years of cultivation Zhu Bainiao had, but by just seeing the speed and trajectory of those two flying blades, it could be guessed easily now that he should have around seven or eight years of cultivation. Unfortunately, at present Ye Feng didn't have the Divine knowledge, hence he was unable to verify it.

“Yibei, hurry up, come over here.”

Scarred face man promptly understood the situation, he somewhat had a lingering fear by looking at the corpse of Tornado Axe lying on the ground, as well as by seeing Zhu bainiao who was sitting beside Ye Feng. He called Zhao Yibei rightaway to help him in throwing the corpse into the rapid flow of the front side river.

Without any hesitation Zhao Yibei immediately got off and together both of them dragged away the corpse and with a tissue they wrapped the throat to stop blood, so as to avoid leaving behind the bloodstain.

“This man Tornado Axe was very good at destroying the corpse and leaving no trace.”

Zhu Bainiao looked at the expression of Ye Feng, and found that he really had an expression like an ordinary person. With a somewhat panic-stricken appearance he continue explaining things: “He wanted us to eat the broadsword surface, naturally I should retaliate against him. He should be very glad to die in the way he was most excel at.”

(Lastvoice : ‘broadsword surface’ <– this has been used by author in

order to describe ‘killing a person and throwing his body into the water to leave no trace.’ I don’t know what should be the appropriate term to be used here. :P)

Broadsword surface was a slang word, used especially by Jiangsu, which meant to kill a person and throw his body into the water to completely destroy it along with its trace.

Ye Feng raised his head and looked at the front where both Scar and Zhao Yibei together were trying to dispose the corpse into the rushing river. He thought in his heart that finally today the chapter of Jiangsu ended here in this way.

“Relax, it’s so neat and clean that in future nobody would be going to cause you guys any trouble, not to mention Jiangsu Duo don’t have any backstage supporter”

Zhu Bainiao continued.

Ye Feng nodded: “Who could have thought that Zhu would be the Senior master of Hidden Weapon Technique, moreover being able to be with this senior person on this journey is really a matter of great honor for me.”

He displayed this performance as if he truly admired him very much.

Zhu Bainiao saw that but he didn’t suspect at all, he was still considering Ye Feng as an average person. He had no idea about why a boy like him wanted to go to the ancient tomb?

When Scar and Zhao Yibei finished dealing with the corpse and tattered motorcycle, they came back in the car and finally Hummer moved on. After an hour, they would be able to reach their destination Linjiang City, but this short distance was going to be the most restless and disturbing moment for Scar and Zhao Yibei.

Presently, these two men genuinely had realized that the Jiangsu was very sinister and dangerous man, the slightest mistake from their side, and they would have been dead by now!

Chapter 061: Again Saw That Handsome Young Man

Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei didn't know the relationship between Ye Feng and Zhu Bainiao, but they believed that they were kind of at the same place.

Because of this, these two talented people were considered by them as trustworthy and they felt a little relieved. Soon Hummer proceeded into a relatively lively region. After an evening's travel, City Linjiang finally arrived.

“Find a place to park, Scar and Yibei, you two guys find an inn to stay.”

Ye Feng instructed them and then said again : “I'm leaving with Zhu Bainiao for few days.”

“Ok.”

Scar nodded his head to comply with his order, but he was somewhat worried in his heart, if by any chance Ye Feng failed to come back on time, wouldn't he be killed by poison?

The black Hummer H2 gradually stopped at the roadside.

“Don't worry.”

Ye Feng got out of the car and went straight to the side of Scar and said in a whispering tone : “Before leaving I will surely help you in quelling toxicity, in case I can’t come back within a week, and the effect of your poison starts showing its sign, then eat this which will press down the toxicity of the poison and you will be all right.”

After finished saying, he quietly tossed a little pill towards him. It was him who earlier prepared this good thing so that at the time of emergency it could suppress the toxicity within the body of Scar faced man upto a duration of half a month.

“Yes.”

Scar took the little pill and nodded, then with a bit of hesitation he asked: “Don’t I need to go along with Ye elder brother?”

“There is no need to, just wait for me here. In addition, I have to pretend that I’ve been continuously staying in the inn, remember?”

Ye Feng said that the biggest objective behind bringing Scar and Zhao Yibei over here was especially this only.

The news that he left Yanjing would certainly reach the ears of many people. So, in order to avoid inconvenience, he must let Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei stay in Linjiang city to camouflaged as always together with Ye Feng. The method was very simple, to go out everyday to buy food, moreover, must be three shares of food should be bought everytime and so on. He had a firm belief that Scar could pull it out very well till the end.

“Alright!”

Scar solemnly answered one to him, however he faintly understood what Ye Feng wanted to say.

“Well, let’s go.”

Ye Feng turned around to look at Zhu Bainiao, but he noticed that Zhu Bainiao wasn’t paying attention to his and Scar’s discussion and action, rather he was looking somewhere at the front of the road.

Ye Feng tracked his vision and looked towards that direction, and saw that two persons carrying a large bundle of tarpaulin on their back, attired in grey colored garment and straw-hat, these visitors were proceeding along the road, although their footsteps movement was slow, but their speed was quite quick. There was a man and a woman. By looking at their attire, it could be said that their appearance was out of the tune with the modern city style.

“Get inside the car, just make sure that don’t get discovered by them.”

Just a moment ago Zhu Bainiao got off the car and immediately spotted two people at a very distant place. Hence, without giving a second thought he quickly said that and simultaneously pulled opened the car’s door to seat in the car.

“Obey Elder Zhu.”

Ye Feng saw that Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei looked towards him

and then they nodded. He had a feeling that those two straw-hat visitors were not ordinary people.

After getting in the car, Hummer moved on and galloped after those two straw-hat visitors to surpass them. In order to avoid future trouble, Ye Feng didn't look at those two straw-hat visitors, because he was aware that once the cultivation reached a certain extent, then the eyes of the cultivator used to become very sensitive to other people's vision.

Early in the morning there were very sparse passers-by in that locality, and they all were throwing their gazes at those two straw-hat Visitors with the surprised eyes. But the sudden approaching Hummer became a matter of even more inexplicable envy for them, the surrounding people were staring at Hummer as if they were thinking in their hearts that they were able to afford a Hummer, it seemed like they really were very rich people ah!

“Elder Zhu, who are those two people?”

Ye Feng saw the distance was getting more and more far, so in a soft voice he asked that.

“Heavenly Sword Palace, a crazy couple, don't mess with them.”

Zhu Bainiao had a very normal expression at that moment like always, but in the depths of his eyes, a trace of tension could be easily spotted, even Ye Feng could notice it.

“Oh.”

Ye Feng pretended as if he didn't care about it, he just nodded his head after hearing his reply and decided not to ask anything further.

Just when Zhu Bainiao's words fell, the whole body of Scarred face man started trembling, he who was sitting right in front of Ye Feng, it seemed like suddenly something cropped up in his thought process.

Ye Feng saw that and thought in his heart that was this man, Heavenly Sword Palace, possibly that martial arts user, that swordsman? Could it be that the man who left such a terrible scar on the face of Scarred face man, was the man of this Heavenly Sword Palace?

Ye Feng didn't ask anything from him, and now he even knew the status of the opposite party. It was close to impossible to help Scar in his retaliation. The strength disparity was way too big, that fellow now might be having currently at least 20 years of Cultivation

Hummer pulled into the city, all the way it kept on capturing the attention of numerous resident. Zhu Bainiao somewhat was looking vigilant because of these visions, he gave a hint to Ye Feng to find an appropriate place to stop the car.

In a hotel entrance, Hummer advanced towards the underground parking lot. Soon all four people get out of the car one after another. At this moment, Zhu Bainiao's old style cell phone vibrated suddenly. He pulled it out and looked at the number that immediately changed his complexion.

“Where the tomb site is, now directly lets go over it.”

Ye Feng said that while turning his head towards Zhu Bainiao, but what he saw suddenly was there was a terrific change in the facial expression of Zhu Bainiao, which made him little vigilant.

Zhu Bainiao had killed Tornado Axe by using his opponent's favorite method of killing people, this shifty-eyed tomb raider was absolutely a very cruel, ruthless and merciless character, Ye Feng must have to be very vigilant against this opposite party.

“Sorry, I can't come along with you now.”

By still gripping tightly that 10 million bankcard, Zhu Bainiao said with emphasis: “it's not my intention to do the breach of contract, I really have something very important to do now!”

Then he took a step to leave.

“Don't try to run away, otherwise I will inform my grandfather that you have cheated me 10 million, then be mentally prepared to take responsibility for whatever happens with you afterwards.”

Ye Feng said that and snorted coldly, by saying that he kind of issued a heavy threat!

Hearing that Zhu Bainiao gawked and felt a bit of surprise, obviously he was little scared therefore he stopped and thought for a moment deeply and then said: “If that's the case, then I'll give you a rough draw of two maps, one map which will lead you to the entrance of the tomb, and

the second one is a roadmap from inside the tomb.”

After finished saying he turned his head, his pair of eyes were trying to dodge his cold gaze: “This is the maximum I can do for you, don’t force me too hard, I’m really running out of time.”

“If this is the case, then draw the map. Scar, get a pencil and paper.”

After saying that sentence Ye Feng stood one side, momentarily all prepared to guard against Zhu Bainiao’s sudden attack. Now he couldn’t find out the level of the opposite party, moreover, he couldn’t dare to compel him rashly to exhibit his strength. If there would be a map of the tomb relics, it would also serve his purpose as well as it would be easy to handle in a way.

The specialized tomb raiders were really very different, it took about five minutes and Zhu Bainiao had already two roughly drawn sketchy maps ready in his hand and on top of that they were quite vivid.

“If the map is wrong, or anything wrong happens to me, then my grandfather won’t let you off.”

Ye Feng squinted his eyes and put away the map.

“Well, rest assured, there won’t be any advantage for me in deceiving you or lying to you.”

Zhu Bainiao lightly snorted and immediately his stature moved and within a couple of seconds he took few steps toward the parking lot

outside and then he ran out as if he disappeared in the wind smoothly in front of those three remaining men!

This guy's agility was equally frightening, even unexpectedly Ye Feng failed to see his trace.

“Because Cultivation is still too low I hope tomb can fetch some rewards for me.”

Secretly Ye Feng's heart was wondering that it would be the best to have a five-year of cultivation, in that way he would be capable enough to protect himself efficiently in this world. Unfortunately, the heavenly material treasure was not easy to obtain, but earlier Zhu Bainiao mentioned something about the telepathic grass, very likely it would be a treasure which might help in promoting cultivation.

He casually looked a bit into those two maps and got a rough idea about them, then he called Scar and Zhao Yibei to leave this place. Soon these three people left the underground parking lot together.

The moment he came out, he suddenly saw that a familiar looking fellow appeared in front of them not far away.

He was that handsome young man of Dragon Clan from the last time!

At the Dragon Clan's trade fair, he was there standing at the entrance of the fair for invitation cards inspection. Ye Feng remembered him instantly. At this time, this handsome young man was standing at the entrance of this hotel with a pair of young lover, and was displaying a

playful and teasing look on his face.

The sudden appearance of him gave a deep shiver to Ye Feng, he thought that if this handsome young man was here then Long Wan'er?

Immediately he swept his vision all around, his mood was already off by now and he was feeling a bit tensed!

Chapter 062: A Maiden Jumped Off A Building

Ye Feng quickly glanced around, but Long Wan'er was nowhere around. It seemed like only this handsome young man of Dragon Clan was present nearby. As a matter of fact, it would be more easier for Ye Feng now since there was no need to worry about being attacked by Long Wan'er such early.

Right behind Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei, Ye Feng was walking but a bit slow, as he was secretly observing that handsome young man, and found out that this fellow seemed to be harassing that young couple.

“How about it, I, Long Xian, have plenty of money, you just accompany me one day and I'll give you ten thousand, what say?”

That handsome young man, Long Xian had carelessly blocked the way of that young couple, and with overflowing arrogance he said that to that attractive young girl while frivolously looking at her.

“Are you crazy, your are getting out of my way or not?”

The attractive young girl scolded him tenderly. Wearing white shirt and black skirt, she was dressed up very nicely, it appeared like probably she just came out from the hotel with her boyfriend. By listening to her tone, obviously it could be concluded that Long Xian had not at all any favorable impression in her mind.

“Oh, everyone has a price, ten thousand is not enough, then twenty

thousand? Thirty thousand?”

Long Xian chuckled loudly: “Come on, beautiful lady come up with a price.”

After saying that, he disdainfully gazed at the youth who was standing beside that beautiful maiden, his eyes were exhibiting a look piled up with a contemptuous expression.

“Young man, joke also has a limit.”

The youth was quite sturdy and grandiose, seeing him talking nonsense in front of them, he came firmly in front of his girlfriend to support and protect her, he fiercely stared at Long Xian and threatened him: “Now apologize, if this thing doesn’t happen, then.....”

“Oh, so now you are threatening me.”

Long Xian contemptuously smiled, there was a black mole on his chin which was extremely noticeable: “Man, I have just started coming to this place, but this place has lack of beauties to play with. I just happened to see your girlfriend, she is pretty enough to attract my attention, also she has a sticking out perfectly suitable bosom. Enough with your nonsense, just lend me your girlfriend for one day to have a fun with me, money is not a problem for me, Hahaha. ”

His statement drew the attention of surrounding passers-by, as a result the expressions on their faces suddenly took a form of despise for Long Xian. Although, they saw such type of thing was happening before their

eyes, still no one dared to come out and say anything in this matter. After all who would like to invite trouble for themselves. Another pair of young lover was also there, but they moved round the road and went away out of the fear of being seen by that handsome man.

After listening to the words of Long Xian, that sturdy youth glared at him with his burning red eyes, the blue vein on his face stuck out suddenly. How could a man hear and endure such type of vulgar words against his own girlfriend?

“Ye elder brother?”

Upon seeing that scene, Scarred face man glanced at Ye Feng, since he wanted to ask that he must not pay attention to those people.

“Don’t bother about it, first go to open those three rooms. Yibei, help me to buy some rations from the nearby area of the hills, so that I can fill my stomach before I set off on my journey.”

Ye Feng said that and directly advanced towards the hotel by completely ignoring the existence of Long Xian and the pair of those young lovers. He thought to himself that it wasn’t like Long Xian would always try to snatch away girls on the street. He really didn’t need to meddle in this kind of matter, he must not get noticed by Long Xian, since that would be the best option for him.

He quickly opened a room, Zhao Yibei went out alone to buy some dry rations for him. On the other side, Ye Feng and Scarred face man finally went into their respective rooms in order to show that they were going to be staying in this room for considerably a longer period of time.

The room was on the third floor and the environment was pretty good as well, but Ye Feng didn't care about the environment. Instead he was thinking about how to exit from this place, he was planning to use window to jump down to the lower floor without being discovered by anyone. Considering his current cultivation, jumping down from the third floor which was ten meters high, was really very dangerous for him. Obviously, for him it would be better to explore any other option.

Ye Feng had completed making constant false appearance, probably after half an hour Zhao Yibei came back with the stuffs including dried beef, pilot biscuit, mineral water and so on, everything was packed in a small packet for easy carrying. It was sufficient meal for a common person to eat for atleast three days. For Ye Feng, to carry it even for one week wouldn't be a problem.

Ye Feng took the black packet from Zhao Yibei's hand, and suddenly he remembered anything and asked: "What happened outside about that handsome young man?"

"They all disappeared till I came back."

Zhao Yibei knew what he meant to ask, with a smile he said: "Probably he is a crazy man, how can he think of finding a woman on the streets like this. Even the others girl who would be willing to accept such type of offers for the sake of money, will never agree to something asked in this way. Ye elder brother, won't you say anything?"

Ye Feng did not speak, he just put down his heart.

On the basis of rationality, Ye Feng was not a good person, if someone got caught into any dangerous situation, then Ye Feng would never go to interfere in his matter to help him out. But sentimentally, he was very emotional type, he was little worried about that couple of young lovers.

Long Xian was from the world of the martial arts, and just now he had a conflict with that sturdy youth, sure enough no good outcome would come out from this conflict. Since, Zhao Yibei didn't see those two people still conflicting, then in that case Long Xian should be gone by now.

He returned to the room alone, as he wanted to take his mask and keep it in that black easy to carry packet to carry them all together. But suddenly from his window, he heard a sound of glass broken!

Following that sound, a weeping sound of a girl appeared, and just after that sound, again a sound of a weighty thing fell heavily on the ground was heard and then the crying of that girl suddenly stopped!

Ye Feng wrinkled his brows, after packing up his stuffs he immediately ran up to the French window edge and saw a young girl fell from the building to the ground, the ground was full of fresh blood, it looked like she was not alive.

“Wasn't she that maiden from back then?”

Ye Feng felt a cold shiver in his heart, wearing white shirt and black skirt, wasn't she just a moment ago outside with that handsome young man, Long Xian? Currently her shirt and skirt had the torn traces here and there. Ye Feng slightly wanted to know what happened with her.

“Isn’t this the deed of that Handsome young man of Long Clan?”

As soon as Ye Feng thought and relted this incident with Long Xian, he became inexplicable angry in his heart. Although, he didn’t know concretely what was the matter, but compelling others to jump off a building, that handsome young man also couldn’t dare to do this thing.

In the World of the Immortals, Ye Feng had seen the deaths of lots of people, even after coming to the Earth, he had seen innumerable deaths repeatedly. But they all were evil and rogue doers. This time, at present, the dead person was an innocent maiden!

Behind the hotel there was an alley, generally no one used to pass through that alley. But when the girl jumped off and her voice heard by the surrounding people, the crowd quickly began to gather up there, simultaneously many people began to report to the police by hitting 120.

Looking at the pool of red blood all over the ground, Ye Feng didn’t react a bit, instead without any hesitation he changed into a black sportswear which he had brought from black Hummer and then he put on his mask and picked up that black packet.

He did not jump through the window to leave, rather he quietly left the room in such a way that not even Zhao Yibei and Scar noticed him leaving the room. By following the staircase he arrived to the hotel lobby. The hotel had total three elevators together, Ye Feng walked out of the hotel by hiding in the side of the elevator.

In case this scumbag Long Xian would appear, then Ye Feng would follow him very far and would look for the opportunity to settle this

completely by using his sword! Anyway, his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring was a very convenient thing by which he could receive and dispatch things freely without leaving behind any clue of murder. This sword was not the entity, rather it was made up of Zhenqi which used to scatter. So, where would someone try to look for the murder weapon?

After neatly finishing everything, he would go straightly into the mountains to look for the ancient grave by following the map.

The news of a girl jumped off a building behind the hotel, very soon spread out and came to the knowledge of the nearby people as well. They also rushed to the alley behind the small crowd. The hotel lobby's elevator doors finally opened, however, it was not Long Xian who appeared from the elevator, but it was that sturdy youth in a totally bruised condition, a trace of anxiety could be seen on his face, was he not the boyfriend of that girl who just jumped off?

“Lily, Lily that beast”

That sturdy youth was black and blue all over, he was shouting the name of that girl loudly. Staggeringly he ran out of the hotel towards the back alley.

When he saw the fresh blood flowing everywhere, and down on the ground her girlfriend completely motionless was lying in a pool of blood, his brain felt a severe thunder and it went totally blank. He felt as if his whole body had weekend and he became completely numb.

Chapter 063: Distressed Zhu Bainiao

Ye Feng waited for Long Xian for about ten minutes, but now he couldn't wait for him any longer to come out, since three police cars rushed over there and they encircled the hotel completely.

“It is strange, where did that handsome young man run away, was he still somewhere inside the hotel?”

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows and finally decided not to wait for him any longer.

He thought for a while that Dragon Clan was counted as the number one Clan in the martial arts world, needless to mention its influence in common custom, even if Long Xian compelled a girl to jump off a building and was seized by the police, then also perhaps just by a single phone call he would be released easily.

Under such circumstances, why did the opposite party run out of the hotel?

He wanted to get rid of Long Xian but without much extra effort, he already had wasted too much of his precious time on this scumbag which wasn't needed at all. Now at any cost, he couldn't go back to the hotel to kill him, that would be very troublesome for him.

“Relatively, master is still more important

Ye Feng gave a little consideration, then he made up his mind to go directly into the mountains in order to look for the ancient tomb with the help of the map.

He turned around and saw that young girl had been picked up by an ambulance, there were also few policemen who were clearing the accident site and blocking it. Other two police were inquiring that badly battered youth about the incident and were taking notes for record.

Just recently Ye Feng had heard and seen everything personally, that was the reason why he knew that this really was the deed of that handsome young man, Long Xian.

When that youth along with his girlfriend came out of the hotel early in the morning, they suddenly bumped into Long Xian, and then they were entangled by the opposite party, the handsome young man started teasing them. That sturdy youth was a short-tempered man, since the opposite party was pestering them and also insulting his girlfriend in front of him, naturally this behavior of the opposite party would trigger that youth's anger and he raised his hand to hit Long Xian. Unfortunately, the youth was actually not at all a worthy opponent for Long Xian, he was very badly beaten up by him to the extent where he could even die. Long Xian used his Qi on the youth because that youth had aired his anger very badly.

His girlfriend was unable to continue watching him getting thrashed by Long Xian, so she started crying and begging for mercy from Long Xian. But instead of getting any help, she had been dragged into the hotel by Long Xian. The youth didn't know what was going to happen, he just rushed upstairs even though he was severely injured. However, he was too late, when he arrived there, till then that young girl was dead after falling from the building, and Long Xian had disappeared as well.

“Disappeared?”

Ye Feng pondered for a moment, but was unable to think properly. Finally he gave a quick glance to that badly battered youth and thought: if he meets that handsome young man again, then I will help him in taking revenge.

After coming to that conclusion, he jumped out two steps suddenly and directly ran toward the east, but all of a sudden he was discovered by the police.

“Stop!”

One policeman immediately shouted out loud, he thought that this fellow, who was wearing a mask, was too suspicious!

But Ye Feng didn't pay attention to the opposite party, he quickly activated Rapid Shadow Immortal trace and instantly he ran and covered a distance of 30-40 meters just within a second, leaving behind a faint blurred remnant shade, his stature already vanished in front of that policeman. He flashed into a nearby small lane.

“Well, my eyes?”

The two policemen looked at the deserted street, they were also feeling a little strange, probably they didn't sleep soundly in the night that was the reason they were having hallucinations rightnow, they did a mistake, right?

.....

At the eastern side of Linjiang City, there was a stretch of river valley as well as dense forest. Ye Feng took a plunge in the map.

The number of days he used to live and eat outside when he was In the World of the Immortals, he did not know about that but he had long been accustomed to it. After entering the jungle, later the hills, he felt like he was like a fish in water, he didn't have that kind of opportunity in the city, he was feeling ecstatic and very comfortable and his happiness was touching the sky.

Last night when he was in Hummer, he couldn't take proper rest since he had to guard against Zhu Bainiao. However the endurance of a cultivation practitioner used to be much more stronger than the average person. Even when he had a total one-and-a-half years of cultivation, but still if he didn't sleep consecutively for 48 hours, that wouldn't be a big problem for him.

On the basis of the map, he kept on running all the way toward the destination, he didn't see any shadows. Villages and rivers were appearing in the ravine frequently, so he was not at all worried about the water source issue.

Although it was not possible for him to continue displaying Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace all the way, but his physical strength was way better than the average person's strength. His normal running speed was also noticeably fast. All day long he passed through innumerable ravines and small villages. He was running this race since he wanted to quickly

cover up the distance as soon as possible. Soon he was about to approach the Changbai Mountains Nature Reserve, the topography was gradually high.

The Popular Changbai Mountain tourist attraction was not here, so naturally this place was off the beaten track.

“This map is pretty good, it seems like according to this map, it is going to take another two hours to reach the vicinity of the entrance to the tomb relics.”

Ye Feng leaned against a tree trunk to rest for a while and drank some water. He then calculated the distance on the map. He had given 10 million to Zhu Bainiao, although the opposite party didn't lead him to the tomb since he had some urgent matter to deal with immediately. But he had a feeling that the other party didn't need to deceive him.

Ye Feng rested slightly for more than ten minutes, afterwards he felt that he regained his most flourishing condition, hence he finally started once again. But this time, he hadn't run far, and suddenly he heard a flurried sound of footsteps coming from woods ahead .

“Someone?”

Ye Feng frowned and became alert, hastily he started looking for a big rock and hid behind it. He had heard that because of the sake of that Telepathic grass, this place had become recently an attraction for a lot of the people of martial arts world. In such a case, Ye Feng could never dare to make a move here carelessly.

Not to speak about other people, but Zhu Bainiao was that sort of opposite party who could suddenly appear behind Ye Feng's back, and if at that moment Ye Feng fell short to dodge him then undoubtedly he would fall prey to his attack and would be dead in no time. Zhu Bainiao was truly a very dangerous and sinister martial artist, totally no inferior to the World of the Immortals!

Disordered footsteps as well as heavy breathing sound was heard , Ye Feng could hear clearly that only one person was running over, as if he was probably injured.

“Who is there ahead?”

An incomparably vigilant sound soon went into Ye Feng's ears which made him gawk. Such a sharp and offensive voice, wasn't it Zhu Bainiao's voice?

“Oh? Actually its Zhu Bainiao.... in such a distressed condition.”

Ye Feng didn't forget this point that currently he had his mask on, without revealing his identity and still hiding behind the stone, he said that in a lower voice.

“Your Excellency, who is the one who recognized me?”

Zhu Bainiao stopped his footsteps, as if he leaned on a tree to rest his body, he heard Ye Feng shouted his name, that was why he became more wary.

“I am a friend of Ye Feng, I was about to go to the tomb along with him. He talked to me about you, did you give him that map or that sketch?”

Ye Feng heavily smiled: “My name is Mo Jiuge, I do not know why you are under such a difficult condition elder brother

“Did you killed that corrupt Wolf Sword while putting on a mask?”

Zhu birds apparently had already heard this name “Mo Jiuge”, so all of a sudden he turned more vigilant.

As per the rumors, that masked man, Mo Jiuge, was a very scary swordsman! That corrupt greedy Wolf Sword who had a five-year of cultivation, such a ferocious swordsman was he, even though his head was chopped off by Mo Jiuge in just a single strike. That thing totally stunned Dragon Clan and since then it listed Ye Feng as its archenemy!

“it’s me.”

Ye Feng replied in a sinking voice.

“Ha ha ha, Heaven is really perforated, letting me meet such a great figure just before the point of my death,Coughs

Zhu Bainiao burst out laughing, but soon he started coughing breathlessly. It was quite clear that he was very severely injured.

“Since you are a friend of Ye Feng who is also my friend then let me tell you, this Telepathic grass may help you to promote your cultivation for more than two years. If you help me to do one thing, then in return I will bestow it upon you. Anyways, the arteries of my heart have been broken, in any case I have around two hours left

As soon as that statement of Zhu Bainiao fell, Ye Feng was totally startled by it.

Surprisingly a very short period of time left, Zhu Bainiao was unexpectedly in a very difficult situation. It seemed like in order to grab that Telepathic grass , his whole body was badly injured in the process of chasing down.

More than two years of cultivation!

Without any doubt, Ye Feng immediately changed his mind.

Chapter 064: Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass

Under a hill cliff, wearing his mask in the disguise of Mo Jiuge, Ye Feng was sitting beside Zhu Bainiao by resting his back on a rock.

Zhu Bainiao was still attired in the same dark blue colored cloth, but this time his cloth was appearing completely tattered, especially around the chest area there was a big hole and was damped with fresh Blood. By looking at his face it seemed like he was feeling very exhausted and he had a very painful expression on his pale face. In comparison to what Ye Feng had imagined, Zhu Bainiao was in more miserable and distressed condition than that.

“Just promise me one thing, and consider this Telepathic Grass as yours.”

Zhu Bainiao was struggling hard, with his hand he was constantly caressing his bosom where he had a severe injury. After saying that he took out a tough blue plant difficultly, that plant even had roots, it was as long as an arm of an adult person. Altogether there were 78 leaves and were looking unusually attractive.

As soon as Ye Feng's eyes fell on it, his mind completely blew away, wasn't that called 'Hair Ornament Blue Sprit Grass' in the World of the Immortals? Unexpectedly, it was called Telepathic Grass here on Earth. If this Blue Spirit Grass would mature, it had the ability to promote one's Cultivation upto three years after the absorption of its spiritual energy!

The effect of this Blue Spirit Grass was much more stronger than that

‘Gold Leaf Grass’. Because to have such an effect of Gold Leaf Grass, it must be thirty years old, then only it could give its full effect. But, even in the World of the Immortals it was next to impossible thing, because abundant of plunderers were there everywhere who were in search of this Grass, as long as this had reached certain years of age, they were picked out by them.

The plant which was capable of enhancing one’s Cultivation was known as Spirit Grass and the plant which was incapable to enhance the Cultivation was known as Medicinal Herbs. The value and effect of both the grasses were completely different. In the entire world, the type of Spirit Grass was not present in abundance, but each kind of Spirit Grass had the capability to enhance Cultivation of every individual only once, during the first time use.

This was the reason why Ye Feng was suddenly taken aback. In the World of the Immortals as well, this Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass was considered more precious as compared to Lingshi. It was totally beyond his thought that there could be the existence of the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass on the Earth, unexpectedly.

At present, this Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass had almost approached its maturity. If Ye Feng would get an opportunity to absorb the spiritual energy of this Grass, then certainly he could reach four or even more years of Cultivation.

“A step closer to five years.....”

Ye Feng was inevitably excited deep in his heart, but on the surface he was showing a face covered with an indifference expression. Because this stuff was still in the hands of Zhu Bainiao, in that case, how could he

become happy and excited beforehand.

Although this guy was seriously injured and dying, but still it was very difficult for Ye Feng to hit a person who was already at the point of his death. Moreover, Ye Feng also self-examined that dodging the flying blades of the opposite party was still very difficult for him even though the opposite party was under such a critical condition.

“If you can’t make it, I would rather Keke, destroy it!”

He said that to Ye Feng while coughing continuously. On the other hand, he had that Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass gripped in his hand very tightly.

“Tell me, how did you turn like this?”

Ye Feng was also a little curious, if it was said that this fellow turned into this condition just for the sake of the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass, that was not at all worthwhile. This reminded him of his first meeting with Long Wan’er, at that time the opposite party was also in the similar condition.

“I don’t know why do you want to go to the tomb site, but I am just asking you to help me kill a person

Zhu Bainiao, while resting against the rock and looking upside towards the heaven with his eyes full of sadness, finally told his story and experience about it, gradually.

Ten years ago, Zhu Bainiao was merely an ordinary tomb raider. Once, accidentally he saved the life of a very skilled senior person, as a result, in return that senior expert taught him a type of superficial martial arts technique as well as Hidden Weapon Technique. With the use of those techniques, his body became very healthy and strong, hence the exploration of ancient grave became quite handier for him. For these past several years he had obtained lots of wealth from the tomb, but unfortunately this tens of millions were all squandered freely because of his beloved woman.

The woman he loved was called Cuckoo, who was at present a disciple of Hidden Immortal School, which was considered as one of the top ten big schools of martial arts. This school was located in Kuocang Sang Caves which was one of the top ten big beautiful and heavenly places. The disciples of this school were excel at Hidden Weapon Technique, which was almost similar to Zhu Bainiao's method.

Some time ago, while exploring the old tomb of Shang Dynasty in Changbai Mountain, Zhu Bainiao suddenly discovered the Telepathic grass which was about to mature soon. That was the most ecstatic moment for him, he became extremely joyous and wild out of happiness, he then took a picture of that grass as an evidence and sent it to his beloved Cuckoo. The Telepathic Grass was priceless, it appeared like it could absolutely raise the sanguinary rule in the world of martial arts!

But eventually this made them realize their initial dream – that was to fly away from here with enough wealth, by separating Cuckoo from the fetter of the Hidden Immortal School.

Therefore, when Zhu Bainiao came out of the tomb, he disclosed the news of the existence of Telepathic grass to two big power of martial arts' world – Tian Daodian and Dragon Clan. Although these two big

influences in the world of martial arts were not the strongest Clans, but were actually quite wealthy. It was the plan of Zhu Bainiao, to make these two influences bid for the Telepathic grass, and when this Grass would mature, then he would sell it out.

But, unfortunately, he didn't know how did this news about the appearance of Telepathic Grass soon got spread all around the country. Because of that, various people from various places started coming to Changbai Mountain in search for it. Zhu Bainiao always wanted stability in his life, seeing this situation he understood that he did a good job. But in case he couldn't be able to obtain the Telepathic grass, in that situation he decided to get hold of 10 million from the other source. That way he would secure his future, as well as he would also try his luck in Changbai Mountain.

If he could be able to obtain the Telepathic Grass on time, then in that case he would sell it out and reap a big amount of money. But if he failed, then he would depend on this 10 million, and together with Cuckoo he would go to faraway place.

However, when he came to Linjiang city, suddenly he received some information about Cuckoo that she had also come to Changbai Mountain! That made his heart very restless, he immediately left Ye Feng and rushed directly towards the mountains.

Very soon, he got to see Cuckoo finally, and together with her, he went to take the Telepathic Grass. Fortunately, that concealed location had not been discovered by other people, as well as the Telepathic Grass also had not been plucked out from there. However, in such a crucial moment, out of the blue a handsome youth jumped out of nowhere. He was also from Hidden Immortal School, and to one's surprise he moved towards Cuckoo and united with her there on the spot in front of Zhu Bainiao and

together they stood against him to start a fight with him!

It didn't take Zhu Bainiao long to understand the current scene, he immediately interpreted that he was cheated by Cuckoo. His beloved woman had already ganged up with that long and handsome youth! The moment he realized the whole situation, he felt a severe pain in his heart, but he had no time to waste, hence he quickly started running away by holding the telepathic grass in his hand. Both the disciples of Hidden Immortal School – Cuckoo as well as that Handsome youth started releasing hidden weapons on him respectively, with the intention to kill Zhu Bainiao.

After a long pursue, Zhu Bainiao finally got success in getting rid of the opposite party, by relying on his rich experience. But in this all chaos, his chest was badly hit by two hidden weapons and the arteries of his heart were also broken. Now, he could survive no longer than two hours.

“That guy Keke is called Li Junlong, he is also one of the disciples of Hidden Immortal School, currently he is taking younger generation training of hidden weapon technique there..... He has been gifted with the extraordinary talent in Hidden Weapon Technique comprehension,KeKe.....You help mein killing him”

Zhu Bainiao coughed up fresh blood, he then fervently gazed at Ye Feng and said : “With just a single strike of your sword you had killed that strong corrupt Wolf Sword very easily Just absorb this Telepathic grass Li Junlong is inevitably not your opponent!”

“And what about that Cuckoo?”

In a very low voice Ye Feng inquired that.

“Let let her go, after all

Zhu Bainiao was getting weaker with the passing time, his voice was staggering and his speech was also not very coherent, the area around his chest was appearing bright red because of the heavy blood flow, moreover he was facing a huge blood loss as well.

“I understood, I promise you.”

Ye Feng said that in a soft voice while nodding his head.

As per the opinion of Ye Feng, Zhu Bainiao’s feelings for his beloved Cuckoo was still very strong, even though he was badly betrayed by her, still his conscience was not supporting him to take revenge.

“Hurry up, hide from them and start your absorption process quickly by the time I’ll help you in holding them.”

Zhu Bainiao had a very sensitive and dynamic pair of ears, all of a sudden he felt something and instantly he handed over that Blue Spirit Grass into the hands of Ye Feng, and urged him to start his part of job rightaway.

No doubt Ye Feng’s cultivation was way too inferior to Zhu Bainiao, similarly his sensation capability was also nothing as compared to Zhu Bainiao’s quick and keen sensation. He immediately took that Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass from Zhu bainiao’s hand.

Goal achieved!

As long as this stuff was in his hands, everything was fine for him now. If it were someone else, probably after achieving one's goal, who would bother to manage other's promise or work. But, Ye Feng was not such kind of a person.

As a man, he must abide by his commitment!

Blue Spirit Grass was now in his hand, so he quickly took a look around his surrounding, and soon noticed that there was a steep which was more than ten meters away in the deep forest. That was quite an appropriate and easy place to hide. He immediately jumped and ran towards that side, and quietly hid there leaving behind Zhu Bainiao on the same place.

Now, it was not the time to be immersed in man and woman's deep love, Ye Feng couldn't afford wasting time. Moreover, Ye Feng had a clear idea about Zhu Bainiao's injury and he also knew that he couldn't be saved as well.

Soon, light and lively sound of footsteps of a man and woman, from far to near started arriving, as if they were approaching towards him rapidly!

Chapter 065: Feeling Of Being Strong!

Ye Feng sneaked out quickly and hid in the bushes below in the steep slope while controlling his breath as smooth as possible, so that he couldn't get discovered by them. Simultaneously, he started absorbing the divine spiritual energy of the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass which was still in his hand.

Fortunately, he had been tempering his meridian and broadening them, or else after coming to this world, just the normal width of the meridian couldn't be able to withstand the power of the divine spiritual energy of the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass.

Zhenqi within his body started boiling up again, at the same time his Core Dan started transforming a wisp of divine spiritual energy into Zhenqi, which was later on perfused in the meridians of his whole body, for the rapid growth of Cultivation!

While this process was going on, from behind, the sound of the footsteps of both the man and the woman soon stopped as if they arrived to the side of Zhu Bainiao and stopped next to him.

Then the voice of both the parties passed on one after another.

“Cuckoo, I just want to ask one thing from you, why

It appeared like Zhu Bainiao was disinclined to show any action against his beloved woman, he just asked a simple question from her

difficultly.

“Why can’t I?”

A fairly pleasant female voice resounded everywhere, her voice revealed a touch of disdain for him: “Just relying on a mere 10 millions, still you want me to follow you, is this a wishful thinking? Not to mention, it has been so long since my heart has been with Junlong, and I have always been using you. ”

“Ha ha.”

Soon after a candid male voice arrived, he was that handsome youth who was called Li Junlong. By listening to his voice he seemed to be a gentleman, but his words were really outrageous which were enough to make the blood boil : “Really good, you have been racking your brain all the time to rob a grave, you accumulated 40 millions from all sides, and finally handed it over to Cuckoo, and eventually it became the resources for me in my practice. Should I need to thank you for this, Zhu Bainiao?”

“Well, without further ado and idle talks..... you really deserve being a disciple of Hidden Immortal Faction, you are truly a very treacherous person Ah

With difficultly Zhu Bainiao said that, at that time he couldn’t feel any physical pain, instead the only thing he could feel was the mental anguish, which would never allow him to rest in peace after his death.

“Come on, a mere forty million, it was nothing in my eyes.”

The youth smiled disdainfully : “Come on, now just show me the Telepathic Grass, I am totally disinclined to deal with you. However, why are you prepared to lose your life just for the sake of an insignificant Telepathic Grass? That Grass isn’t worth it.”

“I’ll die, but I’ll never let that heavenly precious treasure fall in the hands of a cheap person like you!”

While saying so, Zhu Bainiao suddenly turned excited again : “Well Cuckoo, don’t believe him this man just wants to absorb the Telepathic Grass by himself, how could he be willing to sell it, and run away with you to some faraway place

The woman who was called Cuckoo, groaned loudly and said: “You are wrong, how Junlong can be such person. We have already reached an agreement, that when the Telepathic Grass will be sold in billions, we will go abroad and start a calm and steady life, and then we will not go back to Hidden Immortal Faction..... ”

When these words came out, Ye Feng heard that from his hidden place and finally understood something more about the whole story.

It seemed like the environment of Kuocang Cave’s Hidden Immortal Faction was not as good as it should be, strict and harsh rules were prevailing there, was this making Cuckoo and Li Junlong not wanting to continue to stay there?

“You are too naive.....”

Zhu Bainiao was struggling hard while speaking: “Li Junlong is a disciple of Hidden Immortal Faction, but is also the adopted son of the elder of criminal law, how could a guy like him abandon such a condition, and together with youwith you

“You’re talking nonsense!”

Cuckoo scolded him tenderly by suddenly interrupting him in the middle of his speaking.

But then, a series of laughter echoed all around : “Ha ha ha, Zhu Bainiao, you are very, actually its worth praising. Correct, it’s impossible for me to give up such condition. Therefore, this sluggish woman is going to survive for next couple of seconds, luckily you guys are able to die together atleast, also in this way both of you guys should be able to rest in peace, right? ”

As he said these words, several hidden weapons suddenly echoed from nowhere, followed by flying blades which penetrated her body, and in the next moment the sound of hidden metal weapons mutually colliding with each other, echoed and made an endless sound.

“Ah! Junlong, you

The Woman screamed in agony as if she was injured severely, the sound of her staggering disordered footsteps resounded rapidly.

Ye Feng heard everything and instantly got a brief idea about the

current situation, he understood everything that this was Li Junlong, and currently he wanted to get hold of the Telepathic Grass. Therefore, it was now unbearable for him to let that woman tag along with him. Hence he finally made up his mind, to get rid of Cuckoo right now.

As far as the specific details of this situation was concerned, Ye Feng didn't know about it deeply and accurately. In the meantime, the absorption of the divine spiritual energy of Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass was finally completed!

Now, he had finally reached full four years of Cultivation, because of that his strength was increased two times than before. Presently Ye Feng's whole body was feeling stronger than before, his Zhenqi was rushing crazily throughout his body!

He could feel that now that he could make an optimum use of his Bagua Boxing, it was like a single punch could be able to hit a cow and make it fly! Besides, his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace could finally continue to last at least one minute, that was an enormous guarantee for his safety.

In case he drew out red Zhenqi sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, then its duration would also be several times longer than the previous time.

It was the time to act!

Ye Feng then took a step and immediately cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. As a result, his remnant suddenly dodged from his original position and passed, and his main body already had slid off the

steep slope, and came to a forest where those three people were entangled. Finally, he looked at the field to have a clear idea of the current situation.

Originally, Li Junlong was about to strike and Cuckoo once and for all, but Zhu Bainiao had already anticipated his final move. Hence he raised up and stiffened his body to protect Cuckoo from these flying blades, in the process two blades hit his abdomen, and one hit his shoulder badly.

Meanwhile, Li Junlong also released flying blades, the precise blow to fly the additional three flying blades of Li Junlong. He was the only talented disciple of Hidden Immortal Faction, who had been able to command the Heavenly Diffusing Technique long ago!

Simultaneously, more than ten flying blades departed, Zhu Bainiao was desperately trying to protect Cuckoo, but while doing so 45 knives one after another hit his whole body, and all of a sudden he turned into a seriously injured condition. Fortunately he wasn't hit at the key places, hence probably his injuries were not fatal.

“Cuckoo, quick run!”

Zhu Bainiao's whole body was completely covered in blood, although his beloved woman already had betrayed him, even though he stood in front of her, like a thick wall to keep her off from the flying blades!

The sudden attack frightened and shocked her for a moment, she heard everything what was said but failed to react, her facial expression was revealing that she didn't dare to believe anything. She was a round-faced woman, it couldn't be said that she was an exquisite beauty, but she

couldn't be considered too ugly as well, she was worth a second look, she was in a black dress which already had a full bloom, several blood red flowers.

“Can you still run?”

Li Junlong groaned coldly, these two men were standing at a distance of ten meters away from each other, his hands was all prepared to fire more than a dozen pieces of small blades again. He was an extremely handsome man, moreover as compared to Zhu Bainiao, he was several folds stronger than him, no wonder he became capable to attract the attention of Cuckoo, and made her to be dead set on him.

But just as he was about to make a shot, suddenly he felt something, and quickly leaned and turned over to look at the direction from where Ye Feng was about to appear: “Who — -“”

Shua!

Just within a fraction of seconds the red sword flashed, and Li Junlong who didn't even see the shadow of the enemy, instead felt that he suddenly flew up and the world started spinning round and round before his eyes, and next that appeared in front of his eyes was a standing headless corpse spurting blood non-stop, wasn't that his own body?

Before losing his consciousness, the last thing he saw with his heavy eyes was someone wearing a mask and black casual cloth like a young man, and abruptly a thought about something cropped up in his heart, this was – Mo Jiuge!

Unfortunately, he immediately sank into the inexhaustible darkness, which was followed by unconsciousness.

Ye Feng put away his red Zhenqi sword, and raised his head.

It just took Ye Feng a single sword strike to kill Li Junlong, for him it was not at all a difficult thing to deal with the opposite party when the opposite party had also not reached 10 years of cultivation, moreover the counterparty was good at Hidden Weapon Technique as well. If this incident had taken place in the open, then wouldn't it be like the human slaughter?

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace along with the red Zhenqi sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring , had become entirely an extra-superior assassination technique!

Now he was able to cast these moves and techniques more smoothly and easily. Besides this, even if he bumped into Long Wan'er once again, then he would be able now to challenge the opposite party directly without any fear. This was all because of the feeling of being strong now!

Chapter 066: Crying Ghost Blade Technique

As the headless body of Li Junlong fell to the ground , Zhu Bainiao's mouth threw up fresh blood. Finally he wasn't able to withstand anymore, and all at once he collapsed on the ground.

The moon-face female Cuckoo saw that in a blink of an eye, Ye Feng wearing a mask appeared out of the blue, while in the second blink of an eye Li Junlong's head flew high suddenly. Seeing that she became extremely scared, even her legs felt weak, in addition the wounds caused by those five flying blades on her body, were also still bleeding, and she felt that she was almost about to faint, but barely she leant against a tree.

“Don't, don't kill meTelepathic Grass is with him”

Cuckoo's whole body was trembling as she pointed her finger at Zhu Bainiao, a color of fear could be seen on her face very clearly then.

Seeing this condition, Ye Feng could only shook his head, this kind of woman could never know that Zhu Bainiao not only liked her so much, but was also even willing to sacrifice his own life for her safety.

However in this world, it went without saying that love never had any reason to speak or explain, only Zhu Bainiao himself could understand this thought and feeling.

Ye Feng walked thirty two steps towards him to come close to him, then

squatted down and started examining his injuries.

He was not dead yet, but unfortunately he couldn't hold it much longer, needless to mention that Ye Feng, who was a well-known medicine immortal in the World of the Immortals, still he couldn't do anything to cure him.

“Thank you so much.....You..... Give me a pen and a paper I'll draw you”

Zhu Bainiao was stammering as he was speaking, even lifting up his hand was being almost impossible for him now.

Seeing this, Ye Feng immediately rushed out without saying anything, and returned to his previous hiding place ,that steep slope, he took up the black packet kept on the grass and pull out a map along with a pen. He turned over the previously drawn map of the tomb and along with a pen he presented the back side of it towards Zhu Bainiao.

From one side, Cuckoo was watching everything, but she didn't know what had engaged those two men. This masked man killed Li Junlong, now shouldn't he try to look for the Telepathic Grass as soon as possible? Then why did he go towards Zhu Bainiao with a pen and a paper?

Ye Feng frowned, and thought to himself that this woman was being a little hindrance in his way, so he raised up and advanced towards her.

“You, what do you want to do, don't kill me, don't kill me Ah”

Seeing him coming towards her, Cuckoo was taken aback and exclaimed, she wanted to stand up and escape, but there was no enough strength left in her body.

Bang.

Ye Feng pointed his hand knife on her neck and posed as if he was about to slit her throat, and in a couple of seconds she lost her consciousness.

He then returned and Zhu Bainiao was shivering when he was drawing a map. Ye Feng looked at that sketch and noticed that the map aimed at the eastern China seashore, probably in Zhejiang province range. On the top of the destination, there was written “Crying Ghost Blade Technique” probably with the large character.

What’s that?

Ye Feng had some doubts.

“Hidden Immortal FactionLost Hidden Weapon Technique..... If it is practiced to the extreme level, then it can make flying blades accompany by the sound of crying like a ghost and howling like a wolf, which can affect and directly attack the sanity of the opposing party but unfortunately mymy talent is not high.”

As Zhu Bainiao was saying that, he closed his eyes: “This technique was passed on to my seniorby a traitor of Hidden Immortal Faction”

He hadn't even finished saying that, but then he breathed his last breath, and after that completely no sound came out of his mouth.

“.....”

Ye Feng examined that map carefully, and then he put away the map and paid a silent tribute for a while for Zhu Bainiao.

With his condensed Zhenqi sword, he dug a pit next to Zhu Bainiao's body and buried him inside it. After all, this was not the World of the Immortals, rather it was a modern city, letting the corpses lying on the ground like this was considered here as highly inappropriate. As for the body of Li Junlong, Ye Feng threw it directly from a small cliff into the rushing water to flush it away.

After finished processing everything there, he then came next to unconscious Cuckoo, and slightly examined her wounds, those five flying blades hadn't hit her severely, but it looked like those blades had some toxicity on them.

He hesitated for a bit, but then he took out a small medicine bottle from his black packet, and poured two detoxifying pills into her mouth and forced it down.

Didn't matter whether they would be of any use or not, he just wanted to try anyway.

“The true love of his life, in the end, it was nothing but a clear

betrayal.”

Ye Feng stood up, finally looked at the heap of buried Zhu Bainiao, and then he turned and left the place.

He thought of Su Menghan, if he had to live in this life with Su Menghan, then finally how it would be? No one knew, but since Su Menghan used to trust him, he would also choose to trust the opposite party.

“Crying Ghost Blade Technique, a lost Hidden Weapon Technique of Hidden Immortal Faction if there would be free time, I will go to look at it since it sounds pretty good. That way I can also know more about the martial arts of this world, what’s it all about and how it works.”

Ye Feng thought in his mind, as he knew this Hidden Weapon Technique of the Hidden Immortal Faction’s group of people, was not as simple as it sounded like throwing a flying blade. Throwing their hidden weapon must require much more power than the average person, there must have a specific way through which the internal Qi could move inside.

He was in the thick patch of grass running along a creek, towards the direction of his destination-the ancient tomb site which was not far away, but all of a sudden he saw two familiar figures appeared, unexpectedly they were actually those two persons attired in grey colored cloth and straw hat visitors, carrying a long tarpaulin package, which was resembling some type of weapons.

A man and a woman, on the opposite shore of the creek, not far away

from Ye Feng, and were moving forward in the same direction with him.

Fortunately, where Ye Feng was running, it was very thickly grown long vegetation, and moreover the opposite party hadn't located his existence there yet.

” Heavenly Sword Palace, I don't even know a thing about their strength

[LASTVOICE : Tian Daodian means Heavenly Sword Palace, so from here onwards I'll be using Heavenly Sword Palace to avoid future inconvenience. And in my previous chapter No. 61, I'll change 'Tian Daodian' into Heavenly Sword Palace. Sorry for inconvenience. :)]

Ye Feng cautiously started walking slowly, since he couldn't let the opposite party know that the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass had already been absorbed by him. As when he was planning to change his direction, exactly then accidentally his attention got attracted by few words spoken between that man and woman.

“He he, that young lady of Dragon Clan, should be in front of us.”

Woman prettily said that.

“Heh , last time during Gold Leaf Grass incident, we were being soft. But this time, when we will encounter again, I'll surely kill and behead her with my sword.”

By sticking out his dark and red colored tongue, that man licked his

lips and gave a very murderous look.

“I know you wanted to capture that Miss Dragon alive, enjoy a bit, however a lot of Long people would be there, I am feared that it won’t be so easy to succeed.”

That Woman groaned lightly.

“Baby I know.”

That Man smiled ghastly : “But she is that kind of a exquisite woman, how can I not taste her flavor? Even if it is only a beautiful glamorous corpse

From across the river, hidden in the vegetation clump, Ye Feng was eavesdropping them, and immediately understood the hidden meaning of what Zhu Bainiao said once previously, ” a pair of Heavenly Sword palace, a crazy couple who has some abnormal desire.”

Originally, last time this crazy pair of man and woman had snatched away that Gold Leaf Grass from the hands of Long Wan’er and ran away, as she was passing through them. During that period, she had lost her consciousness and Ye Feng was there who rescued her .

“Really they are a dog bitten people, kind of brain dead people, who don’t have any type of good feelings.”

Ye Feng cursed them badly in his heart, if Long Wan’er ever fell in the hands of these two crazy no-brain people, then who knew what would be

the end. But Long Wan'er was actually against him, she showed her ingratitude in return of his kindness , but also to deal with him everywhere, was absolutely impervious.

“Who is there!”

That gloomy man suddenly barked harshly, which startled and scared Ye Feng.

But soon Ye Feng noticed that the opposite party hadn't found him, but it was a mountain woodcutter who was discovered by him. That woodcutter was also wearing a straw hat, but obviously he was just an ordinary man.

There was a basket of herbs carried by that woodcutter on his back, he should be from the village, who came into the mountain to pick the herbs. When he saw two Heavenly Sword Palace people, he obviously remained surprised for a moment. Then, his eyes bumped into the exquisite stature, the snow white flesh partly visible, highly attractive beautiful woman, he couldn't help but continued giving several glances.

“What are you looking at?”

The gloomy male voice sank, it was obvious that he was not feeling well and totally unhappy because of the vision of the opposite party, and was it possible for his woman to just stay watching this chaos?

“Not good.....”

Ye Feng penetrated the thick patch of grass, and suddenly saw the murderous intention appeared on the face of that gloomy man, as well as his eyes were also flashing relentless bloodshed, seeing this his heart shivered. The woodcutter who was just here to pick up the herbs, was it necessary to kill him?

But before Ye Feng could even think to react, by then that man had untied his long tarpaulin package, and from there he pulled out a sword and grasped it in his hand tightly and reveled it boldly.

Shua!

His stature moved incomparably quick, under the setting sun, followed by a long sword reflecting a orange-red light, he advanced towards the plucking herbs woodcutter, to chop him down on the spot.

It appeared like the Man was lightning fast!

Ye Feng secretly shivered in his heart, to one's surprise in a split of second the counterparty burst out in such a speed, what more heart wrenching was his sudden speed was even more faster than Ye Feng's Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. He simply couldn't get enough time to approach there, he hesitated little bit but only thing he could do then was to watch the sword chopping down that man, helplessly.

If he would chop him down completely into two pieces, then that woodcutter would be done for!

Chapter 067: Chicken-Hearted Long Xian

Basically, Ye Feng didn't even get enough time to react, since the man of Heavenly Sword Palace, by holding a long sword in his hand, had already reached close to woodcutter's head within a couple of seconds. Now, probably in the next moment, he was about to chop him down into two halves.

However, at the same time, another figure appeared like a tornado, he leaped from nearby thick patch of grass, and instantly blocked the front of that woodcutter.

An old man!

“How fast he is!”

Startled, Ye Feng look at that old man, and thought that this old man somewhat seemed a bit familiar, but wasn't he extremely fast? In a flash, he crossed like a tornado in front of his eyes.

Bang!

Instantly the old man condensed his Qi in his palm, and simultaneously shot his palm sideways, an incomparably precise hit fell on the long sword held by that man, which made it fly and fall heavily at the side of the woodcutter, on a huge riverside rock, which split open that rock and caused a very terrifying fissure on it, and as an impact the debris caused by the hit, flew upwards.

Hiding in the thick patch of riverside bushes, Ye Feng took a closer look, and instantly found out that he had actually seen this old man before at Dragon Clan's trade fair, he was actually Huang Lao from Mt. Tianzhu Huang Province, who had a full thirty years of Cultivation!

Unexpectedly, this old man also arrived here, Ye Feng thought this in his heart, and didn't dare to look at the confrontation between both the parties, promptly he took a detour and continued to move forward.

Whether it was the Old man from Huang Province or Heavenly Sword Palace's crazy pair, Ye Feng was not even the least bit interested in getting into any kind of conflict with them. At present, he just wanted to arrive safely at the ancient tomb site, to search for the traces of Su Feiying.

"Huang Lao shouldn't be a wicked man, I don't know why he is looking for Mo Jiuge"

When Ye Feng was thinking this, suddenly he recalled the time when he was in Langfang city's hotel, during that period Huang Lao asked him to convey his words to Mo Jiuge if he would ever meet him.

He shook his head, since he didn't need to think about it rightnow, all the way up along the mountain road, he was being constantly careful with the surrounding situation. The present Changbai Mountain had become crisis-ridden, just recently Ye Feng didn't even notice that Huang Lao was hidden nearby. So, he was on his toes all the way.

Ofcourse, no matter how dangerous the path would be, he would

certainly go to the tomb site, it was impossible for anyone to break his resolve.

It took him another half an hour to arrive at halfway up the mountain, the forest ahead was even more dense and was covered with overgrown weeds.

Through the thick bushes, he inclined towards a small hole and looked ahead towards the winding spiral road of the mountain, most probably after covering a distance of another two or three kilometers, he would arrive at a spacious mountain platform. But suddenly he saw something and wrinkled his brows, there were more than dozen of people at that mountain platform and by looking at them, it seemed like all of them were martial artists of this world.

In order to go to the entrance of the ancient tomb site, this mountain platform was the only way which must be taken. But Ye Feng who was in his mask and wanted to go the tomb site, while passing through so many people currently present on this mountain platform, was purely delusional.

“Oh.. correct, these people are here because of the Telepathic Grass. Is this mountain platform by any chance, a mentioned place in the auction agreement of the Telepathic Grass?”

Ye Feng quickly reacted, but at this moment, he suddenly felt that the disorderly sound of footsteps arrived from ahead, followed by an extremely captivating wheeze of a woman, Deja vu!

(Note : Deja vu means – the experience of seeing exactly the same

situation a second time.)

“What’s this situation?”

Ye Feng stopped his footsteps and immediately wanted to hide in the thick bushes, but before he could make a move, a petite and pretty figure suddenly rushed out of the bushes and crashed into him .

Ye Feng subconsciously raised his hand, since he wanted to promptly drag out his Zhenqi Sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, in order to behead the opposite party in the next moment! Because he was not sure whether the opposite party wanted to sneak attack, or something else.

Although he was in a hurry, but he didn’t fail to see who hit him unexpectedly in his face, that was none other than pretty and charming girl, Long Wan’er!

“It’s You! I

While rushing out of the thick patch of grass, Long Wan’er’s stature naturally advanced towards Ye Feng and bumped into him. She also raised her head, and saw a masked man standing in front of her. Thunderstruck, she remained standing where she was, her beautiful pupil was revealing a color of desperation.

There was an ambush ahead, and a troop of pursuers behind, wasn’t this situation exactly like the same which Ye Feng had confronted in Langfang city’s trade fair?

Ye Feng glanced at her, the situation she was in, was certainly couldn't be considered as very wonderful. Even more, some kind of poison which had the power to "suppress the resistance of one's lustful youthful emotion" had been given to her, and he didn't even know it was given by whom.

Seeing her in this condition, suddenly something cropped up in Ye Feng's mind, and he thought of an excellent idea.

Without giving a second thought, he immediately extended his hand to take advantage of the opportunity, he hugged her soft stature into his bosom, immediately a faint fragrance of her delicate body burst out and greeted his nostrils, a warm and soft feel from the touch, through her piece of snow white one-piece dress, transmitted in the hands of Ye Feng, making him unable to resist his somewhat fiery heart.

But he immediately set his mind, that he wouldn't take advantage of this young girl in this critical situation.

"Who's after you?"

Ye Feng leaned over and whispered softly in her ear.

"You let me go!"

Long Wan'er was struggling in his embrace to free herself from his grip, her cheeks flushed, finally she made an effort to slap him.

Unfortunately, with an increased level of Cultivation, Ye Feng easily

grasped her pink palm: “I wanted to help you, since you didn’t appreciate my kindness, so now forget about it.”

Hearing that, Long Wan’er gasped, her pair of beautiful eyes were staring at him with full of suspicion.

She hadn’t thought ever, that this hateful masked man could really offer to help her with such a good intention, this surely be a cheat. Just by recalling the time during her stay in Langfang city, when this fellow had played jokes on her, triggered her anger and she wanted to throw all the things which was there in front of her. Unfortunately, once again she bumped into him, but she hadn’t retaliated yet, instead, she was again frivolously treated by him.

Long Wan’er thought for a while, she felt that her entire body was impatiently becoming hot, because just a moment ago she was hit by that kind of intense poison, which had the tendency to suppress the resistance. It quickly rushed into her core Dan, and through her meridians, it hit her qi and circulated throughout her body, and then started suppressing her resistance hastily, of that kind of people’s bashful desire.

“Actually right, Yes you can

The beautiful eyes of Long Wan’er shifted towards him, she thought of a way, at this time she was no longer struggling, instead with her weak body she stuck to him: “God Fist Gate..... the two men of God Fist Gate have a very illegal intentions, so can you help me in dealing with them? ”

Just like the pleasant sweet voice of oriole, her inexhaustible, alluring

and powerful voice resounded in Ye Feng's ears.

God Fist Gate?

Ye Feng's mind started functioning fast, he thought of the incident which took place in Langfang's trade fair, that dark-skinned boy, who was kicked by Long Wan'er, was he one of the men of God Fist gate?

Soon, he knew that he didn't guess wrong.

Meanwhile, the rustling sound of the thick patch of grass suddenly appeared, followed by the sound of footsteps approaching towards them from far to near, and soon a familiar self-satisfied voice burst out:!
“Wan'er, come on, just accept your fate without any fight! I would like to see you, so where can you run away, better be a well-behaved girl with me, ok? I together with my fellow apprentice have decided to be good to you, we surely will make you comfortable ”

This sound was not heard at the trade fair, this seemed to be a deliberate fight, was that guy trying to attract the attention of Long Wan'er towards him?

At that time was Long Wan'er ruthlessly humiliated him, the result of which could be seen today that the strength of that feeble man exploded like this, and unexpectedly he even made use of such method to retaliate, the things didn't end here, he even asked his fellow apprentice to gang up with him, since he wanted to embarrass her by shamelessly dealing with her.

As the sound of footsteps was getting closer, Ye Feng could also feel that the man, who was saying these things, was very weak, and there was another man as well, who was almost at the same level like Li Junlong from before. In his heart, he very clearly knew the intensity of the situation, so he didn't flinch.

A moment later, these two figures, by pushing through the bushes, finally appeared in front of Ye Feng, and when they saw each other, they gawked.

The thing which made the opposite party gawked was that Long Wan'er had always been a keen eyesight girl, who used to look on the top, but now unexpectedly seeing her in the embrace of a masked man, stunned them. Apparently they were looking exceptionally intimate like this.

But the reason Ye Feng gawked was completely different, they were actually more than two people. There was the third person, who was being carried by one of those two guys, in his hands. Wasn't that guy who was being carried by one of them, was from earlier, that Handsome Young man, Long Xian?

All of a sudden, Ye Feng got a clear picture of everything, why Long Wan'er was infected. Clearly speaking, since there were lots of Long people, so it would be next to impossible for these two fellows of God Fist Gate to get success in their plan. Unfortunately, they had Long Xian in their grip, by using this method, they wanted to draw Long Wan'er out alone. An easiest way to deal with her.

One of the persons of the opposite party, had been seen before at trade fair. He was that dark skinned young fellow, who had around three or

four years of Cultivation at most, because of that he was not been paid attention by Ye Feng.

Another one of them was carrying that handsome young man, Long Xian. He was tall and was looking very strong, had a treacherous look on his face, probably he was the one who poisoned Long Wan'er. This tricky guy must be the one who would have made plan to draw her out, he must be the fellow apprentice of the dark skinned guy.

Panic-stricken Long Xian, who was in the hands of the tall person, said : “Wan'er, you can't blame me for this. They said that if I wouldn't give you medicine to lead you out, they would perhaps kill me

Chapter 068: One On One

Hearing his confession, Long Wan'er couldn't help but scolded him rudely: "Bullshit."

That handsome young man came late alone, and unexpectedly was caught and threatened by those two men of God Fist Gate. Practically, he was a very stupid person in his whole Clan, how couldn't she ever notice that her Dragon Clan had such an incompetent fellow.

Ye Feng squinted his eyes and looked into the pair of eyes of Long Xian, and thought that this young man was indeed a best quality person, using strength to bully the weak was certainly a favorable situation.

Confronting a pair of ordinary young lovers in Lin'an city, and then compelling that young girl to jump off the hotel's building, was just like using his strength to bully a weak couple, but when he confronted a pair of fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate, he actually became extremely frightened to the extent where he could even pee in his pant on the bad. Besides, he also betrayed Long Wan'er, who was his own Clan member.

"Come with me."

Ye Feng said in a low voice, by embracing Long Wan'er's fervent stature in his arms, he advanced towards the nearby bushes, and by turning back he dragged her to go inside them. This path should be the only mountain road, and if at the moment they would start fighting here, then it would become completely inevitable for him, not to be seen by others, or by Huang Lao and that crazy pair of Heavenly Sword Palace, who

might be approaching from behind any moment, which would become very troublesome for him.

Consequently, he decided to take Long Wan'er, and direct those two fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate into the woods, far away from this path, so that there would be no need to worry about other people's disturbances.

His ultimate goal was to seize this young lady of Dragon Clan, and hold her as a hostage, in order to pass through the platform on top of the mountain! In case above, there would be numerous people of Dragon clan, then by producing Long Wan'er as hostage, he could become able to suppress the attack of opposite party as long as she would remain in his clutch. Right from the platform, he had to cover only a short distance ahead, exactly then the entrance of the ancient tomb would appear there. And once he would advance into the tomb, then surely he would get rid of everyone by relying on the drawn map.

“Where are you going?”

Long Wan'er had no idea about his train of thought, hence in a very soft tone she shouted to ask that.

As she was in his embrace, she was feeling uneasiness all over her body, from infancy to maturity she had never felt this kind of strange feeling. But at this moment, Qi within her body was working crazily to suppress the toxicity, simply she didn't have the strength to break herself free from Ye Feng's arms.

Once she gave up suppressing the toxin, it might burst out badly. At

that time, could it be possible for her to bear it again, it was difficult to say.

She might not want to ruin her life because of this thing!

Now the only thing running in her mind was, either make Ye Feng fight with the two guys of God Fist Gate, or let the people of Dragon Clan discover this situation here.

“Come with me.”

Ye Feng chuckled, because of the mask on his face, he was looking incomparably ferocious. Almost by dragging her all along, he came to the side of the woods.

“Brother Luo Li, pursue them quickly!”

The moment that sinister deceitful tall person saw them advancing towards the woods, he immediately waved his hand, making the dark-skinned young fellow take the lead in the pursuit.

“Brother Luo Lei, I am inferior to you, why don’t you take the lead?”

The dark-skinned guy, Luo Li couldn’t be swindled, instead he had already tighten up his guard and said that.

“Hmmm, I will go ahead then, can you suppress this handsome young man?”

The Tall man lightly groaned and illustrated to carry this handsome young man, Long Xian in his hands.

As Luo Li heard that, a cloudy expression crawled on his face: “That masked man was the one who, just by a single strike of his sword, killed the master Greedy Wolf Sword. What if he launches a sneak attack on me, I am absolutely no match for him.”

Although he wanted to capture Long Wan’er at any cost, but still he didn’t want to risk his own life for this.

“Well, if you are not coming along with me, then I will not go as well, and regarding this matter, you handle it by yourself.”

Luo Lei apparently had heard the name of the mask name ‘Mo Jiuge’, he groaned coldly since he didn’t want to take the lead.

“This.....”

Luo Li hesitated for a moment, and finally clenched his teeth and nodded: “Then brother, you must have to pay attention to protect me.”

He thought that even if he let that Mask man and Long Wan’er run away today, still that wouldn’t bring an end to their future troubles. They had given a very fierce poison to Long Wan’er, in addition to it, taking hold of that mask man wouldn’t be a child’s play. In the future, both of them would certainly join forces against them. Hence, now they didn’t have a better life anymore.

Moreover, if Long Wan'er returned alive, then she would certainly report this to her father and stir his anger. In that case, their school 'God Fist Gate' couldn't be able to shoulder such a terrific anger.

"Relax, although that fellow has killed the corrupt Wolf Sword, but that corrupt Wolf Sword had only five years of Cultivation."

The Tall man, Luo Lei lightly groaned and continued: "However, I, Luo Lei, have eight years of Cultivation, besides I am not that sort of good for nothing person like the corrupt Wolf Sword, in no way I can be inferior to that mask man."

A moment later, carrying Long Xian in the hand, both of the guys entered in the thick patch of grass, chasing behind the mask man and Long Wan'er, to know about their whereabouts. Since, they planned and poisoned Long Wan'er illegally and executed such a shameful thing, so they could certainly not go back to inform their elder, to come and help them.

.....

Carrying Long Wan'er all the way in his arms, through the deep forest, Ye Feng kept on running continuously, and crossed even more than 1000 meters of distance, until he came to a bottomless precipice, and then stopped.

"Ten years of Cultivation, pretty good, such a huge progress!"

Ye Feng was feeling her fiery stature in his arms, he chuckled loudly. Since they were too close together, ofcourse it was quite natural that they could feel the Cultivation of other party.

“Hmmm, four years of Cultivation

At this time, her heart was a bit amazed, this fellow had merely four years of Cultivation, then how unexpectedly, just by a single sword strike, he could be able to kill the corrupt Wolf Sword who had five years of Cultivation, moreover his agility was noticeably good, and his red sword was extremely strange as well, didn't know where was it hidden

She didn't know that Ye Feng had attained four years of Cultivation just a short while ago, by absorbing the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass, otherwise he would be definitely regarded as a monster, a freak.

“Well said, then how about while you stall the tall man, I will deal with that dark-skinned guy, what say?”

Ye Feng chuckled, he lowered his head to stare at her delicate face from across his mask.

“As you can clearly see that currently I am in this condition, so basically there is no way I can take him on.”

Long Wan'er heard that, and her face turned red, she got more and more soft, as if she was about to melt in his arms.

“is it?”

Ye Feng ruminated about it and then said: “Then I must walk away, I have only four years of Cultivation, apparently I am far from the match of that tall person.”

“That

She blushed hard and her cheeks turned red, she hesitated for a moment, but then considered this matter carefully, and thought that whatever he said was also the truth, she had no option left but to only nod: “You must be a bit faster while dealing with that guy Luo Li. Besides, you also have a sword you used while killing that corrupt Wolf Sword, you surely will not let that fellow run away, right?”

“Naturally, so long as you keep holding the tall man, I could be able to kill that guy in next few seconds.”

Ye Feng nodded his head, wearing the facial features of mask he was looking very suspicious, but unfortunately now, Long Wan'er was simply unable to take care of it.

She decided that while both sides would be busy in fighting, in the meantime she would grasp the opportunity to escape and return to the above mountain's platform to look for the elders of Dragon Clan and make them detoxify

“They came.”

Ye Feng smiled, her fragrant body was still in his bosom, he slipped his

hand and slowly pinched her straighten up perky breast and then shoved open her. This girl was under the effect of the 'youthful lust poison', this type of behavior of Ye Feng was making her efficacy outbreak, so as to avoid this, she wanted to run away.

Being touched by him like this, made her very uneasy, her cheeks immediately became red, just by thinking about it, her whole body had turned dry and hot. And also there was the tendency of this poison that it used to suppress one's resistance. Since she was shoved open by Ye Feng, she hastily calmed her mind, and then immediately looked towards those men Luo Li and Luo Lei brothers, who were rapidly chasing after her.

“One on one!”

Seeing Ye Feng and Long Wan'er dividing into two groups unexpectedly, totally stunned Luo Lei, it was like taking the bull by the horns. He promptly knocked down Long Xian and threw him to one side, and then took the initiative and rushed towards Long Wan'er instantly.

Without any doubt, Long Wan'er was looking extremely attractive at present, moreover as compared to the other side, it was a better deal to handle her, even more he could also take advantage of this situation. By the time, on the other hand, Luo Li and the masked man came in front of each other, Luo Li was almost at surprise, he had not expected that this Masked man would come in his way once again. He started thinking about a way how to get rid of him in just one swoop!

He had heard the story about how the mask man's sword had killed the corrupt Wolf Sword, but hadn't witnessed it with his own eyes. He believed that as the disciple of such a big school 'God Fist Gate', although his Cultivation was inferior to the corrupt Wolf Sword, but still he could

definitely be able stall him for a while.

Seeing that, he started sweating out.

Luo Lei hadn't seen the mortification of Wolf Sword, he was actually outside the trade fair of Langfang, but he already had a psychological fear of the name of the Masked man. Not to mention, letting him alone now to face that Masked man, wasn't it like he was assigning his name?

Chapter 069: Now, Its His Turn.

At this moment, Ye Feng and dark-skinned young fellow Luo Li were confronting each other, wearing a mask on his face, Ye Feng chuckled softly and said: “Boy, so do you have any strategic move to execute now?”

Luo Li’s small eyeballs took a quick revolution: “Elder brother, people should mind their own business, it’s not worthwhile to die while vying against one another, right?”

“What?”

Ye Feng’s tone suddenly rose up: “Long Wan’er is a friend of mine, you are bullying and insulting her like this, how can I turn a blind eye?”

“Friend?”

Hearing his statement, an expressionless look immediately clouded over the face of Luo Li, he thought to himself that back then, during Langfang city’s trade fair, these two persons weren’t acquainted with each other, were they? Besides, this masked man had also killed the corrupt Wolf Sword at the scene, and ruined the reputation of Dragon Clan, as well as became their personal enemy.

Then how did they become friends now?

When nearby standing Long Wan’er heard that, she blushed, and started criticizing Ye Feng in her heart, who was a friend of this person, a

really shameless guy he was!

“Beauty, I exhort you not to run wildly all over the place.”

The tall guy Luo Lei gradually approached the side of Long Wan’er, and by putting a smile on his face, said: “You are in such a situation, where would you run away, isn’t it the same like earlier?”

Presently, he wanted to injure Long Wan’er so as to atleast restrict her movement and stop her from running away anywhere, after then together with Luo Li he could launch a convergent attack on Ye Feng from both the sides. Thus by using this way, he could get an edge over him in this fight.

To finish it up as soon as possible, Luo Lei abruptly picked up his pace and quickly leapt towards her, who was currently leaning against the tree, simultaneously he pounded out a shot with his double fists. This skill was considered as the supreme Feat of God Fist Gate, and was called ‘Paochui Fist’!

(NOTE : Paochui Fist is also called as Three Emperor Cannon Punch)

He condensed his inner qi in his double fists in a tigerish style, and in an instant came closer to the chest of Long Wan’er. But when he was about to hit her, he decided not to hit on her face, such an attractive beautiful woman was she, in case her face got injured because of the hit, then it would be very awful. Moreover, to handle this matter like this, would also be not good.

Hitting her chest would be more than enough to shatter her meridians and kill the chance of her running away!

The moment Long Wan'er saw that, her heart became very anxious, with her light footsteps she quickly went behind the back of the tree and hid there, while at the same time, the opposite party rushed towards her and hit directly on the tree's trunk with his double fists, followed by two immediate back to back explosions caused by that hit, making the debris swirl in the air.

A sound "squeak" echoed, and along with it half of the upper part of such a thick and big tree actually started collapsing, obviously it was the might of his pair of fists.

Seeing that, Long Wan'er didn't dare to still stand behind that tree and risk her life. While breathing heavily, very swiftly she rushed towards one side to dodge that chaos, then she looked towards Ye Feng by placing her hope on him, that very soon he would settle his fight with Luo Li, and would come to help her out.

Ye Feng was watching the situation Long Wan'er was in all along, he deliberately had let her exhaust her physical strength, so as to avoid any trouble which might occur while holding her as a hostage. He was very calm and composed even in such a pressure. All of a sudden he made an instance of hand-to-hand fight, and by stacking up a smile, he said to the dark-skinned young fellow: "Come on, let me have a look whether my fist is stronger, or the fist of God Fist Gate is!"

As soon as his voice fell, he spontaneously took the initiative to attack him using Bagua Fist technique, and all of a sudden with an explosion, he approached in front of his face!

“Play with me?”

Luo Li saw that, and smirked secretly in his heart, the boxing style of God Fist Gate was recognized throughout the world as a matchless technique, which had the capability to erupt in the shortest time with the maximum might! In response to him, Luo Li bumped his fist with him hardly, wasn't it like he courted his death?

Since Luo Li was extremely confident about his school's boxing technique, he instantly welcomed Ye Feng's both fists. Just after that his inner qi started circulating heavily and he bumped his fists against Ye Feng's fists!

As a result of the bilateral contact, a violent gust of air burst out, which simultaneously blew away large quantities of leaves lying on the ground, making them flutter in the air everywhere!

“What, we have the same level of Cultivation, how could it be possible....”

Luo Li exclaimed in fear, and then with a screech, his whole body flew upside down as a kite with a broken string, and fell heavily to the ground!

Seeing that Ye Feng sneered in his heart, God Fist Gate was also nothing but a big talk only! Although both of them were at four years of cultivation, but the power intensity of Luo Li's inner qi was only the half of Ye Feng's Zhenqi.

In addition, Ye Feng's Bagua Fist Technique was far exquisite than Luo Li's Paochui Boxing, both sides had just a touch, and as it's impact, Ye Feng's qi promptly entered the opposite party's fist, immediately caused a severe destruction inside his body, and in just one fell swoop jolted him and made him fly.

“Another one!”

Ye Feng vociferated, trod forward, and pounded out the double fists again!

As Luo Li saw Ye Feng approaching towards him, his heart was thunderstruck, he immediately crawled on the ground to set out, since he wanted to escape, so he took rapid steps, and instantaneously slid out the distances of ten meters!

Unfortunately, Ye Feng's agility was not just for a show, in a flash he activated his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and moved forward leaving behind a faint blurred afterimage, followed by two fists, which smashed on Luo Li's face and chest one after another, when he was trying to escape.

“Ping” a sound resounded everywhere, followed by “Kacha” sound, apparently Ye Feng's fist had completely smashed the ribs of opposite party. Afterwards by using his formidable strength, Ye Feng hit the thin and petite body of that dark-skinned young fellow, which made him fly with a huge force in the upward direction, and then his petite body fell down the cliff.

“Ah.....-”

Luo Li screamed pitifully as he was getting smaller and smaller until disappeared, falling down from such a high cliff, on top of that was seriously injured, it seemed like this fellow had no way to survive.

This sudden incident, let Luo Lei freeze to the spot!

How he couldn't think that his young fellow couldn't be able to drag Ye Feng even for a minute, merely a short face to face fight, which resulted in a disastrous defeat to the extent where he fell off the cliff. By listening to this masked man's voice, it looked like he was about twenty years old, how could he be so dreadful?

After all, he was an expert of a school!

Luo Lei's sharp mind worked fast, but at the same time, a loud scolding burst out from other direction.

“Obscene traitor, suffers to death!”

Seeing him distracted, Long Wan'er suddenly dropped the idea of running away, instead, she turned around, jumped up, and pointed her snow white creamy and powerful right leg at his chin and kicked him powerfully.

“Dragon Rise!”

Bang!

The response time of Luo Lei was way too long, besides his Cultivation was not as good as her, by moving her foot in an upward direction she precisely hit his chin, making him fly to the sky, then he collapsed heavily on the ground, and his several teeth fell out.

“Dragon Tail!”

She was in form now, and she had no intention left to forgive him, from sideways she revolved, and kicked a foot on the center of his chest, which threw him away more than ten meters far in one fell swoop, and like a bullet he heavily crashed against a tree, making it completely knock down.

He spat out fresh Blood, as he could no longer dare to stand up. Dragon Clan’s exquisite unique move “Dragon Leg” was not an ordinary move, under the unexpectedness, this guy was strongly kicked by her feet twice, leaving behind a severe injury.

Immediately by suppressing the efficacy of that intense drug, and desperately resisting her body which was becoming hot and fragrant more and more, she suddenly started running away without any hesitation, as she wanted to return to the mountain’s platform, to make the elders of her Dragon Clan take responsibility for her.

But Ye Feng was always concerned about the situation here, hence he continued using Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace! Since his Cultivation was at increased level now, so he had this advantage to continue using it for little longer, moreover he decided not to display any strategic move to exhaust his Zhenqi anymore.

He flashed towards her, leaving behind a blurred afterimage, and by stretching out his hand, he grasped her and seized her in his arms.

“You want to run away? It’s not so easy.”

Ye Feng chuckled loudly while clinging her to his bosom in order to control her delicate and charming stature. The present Long wan’er, had kicked two back to back hits just a while ago, hence now she was not in the position to suppress the drug’s efficacy anymore, her body was getting more and more softer, and her consciousness was also fading away bit by bit. Not to talk about her revolting attitude against Ye Feng, now she wasn’t even in the condition to do anything except clinging onto to him involuntarily, and constantly exhaling blue and light aroma.

“It’s really troublesome

Ye Feng thought to himself, and while hugging her tightly in his arms, he came around the severely injured Luo Lei.

“If you kill me now, then God Fist Gate won’t let you off ever!”

After saying that, Luo Lei vomited out blood and a look of a relentless threat suddenly covered his face.

“Cut the crap.”

Ye Feng’s Zhenqi quickly started rushing out, and in a matter of

second, a red Zhenqi condensed sword emerged out again. Thus, finally, by using his Zhenqi coated sword, he pierced the throat of Luo Lei and finished his life, then he kicked his body off the cliff. He clearly remembered the teachings of his master Su Feying, that was – must get the opportunity to get rid of the threatening enemy!

Then he turned his gaze towards nearby lying Long Xian.

Long Wan'er looked at his eyes, and suddenly became little bit awake, while hugging his neck with her arms, she softly asked: "You want to..... to him..... what do you want to do?"

"Now, it's his turn!"

Ye Feng muttered, thought that today in Downtown, that girl jumped to her death only because of this young man, he naturally would never let this young man, Long Xian off!

Her heart skipped a beat, was Ye Feng going to kill one of the members of her Dragon Clan?

Chapter 070: Long Wan'er's Father

At this moment, just when Luo Lei was knocked down by Ye Feng, exactly then unconscious Long Xian came into senses, and heard Ye Feng saying “now, it’s his turn”, which all of a sudden scared the hell out of him, and his complexion became equally paler as a corpse.

“Big Brother, I was wrong!”

By putting on a distressed face, Long Xian started begging for mercy, though he was timid, but was actually not a fool, sooner he noticed that both of the fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate had disappeared, wouldn’t he have understood by now, that what might have happened to them?

“Where were you wrong?”

With every step, Ye Feng approached close to him, and coldly asked that.

“I should neither have given the drug to Wan’er, nor should have directed her to go alone in this conditionI really had no idea that she is your woman, great swordsman”

Long Xian was cold sweating, he looked at delicate and well-behaved Long Wan’er leaning against Ye Feng’s arms, so he took it for granted that she was her woman and said that.

But when Long Wan'er heard that, it ticked her off, she wished she could jump out of the arms of Ye Feng and throw several hundreds of hands out on Long Xian, who was this masked man's woman? Unfortunately, at present the efficacy had burst out within her body, making her suppress it fully, otherwise, she was afraid that she might become delirious any moment, letting Ye Feng overthrow her at the scene.

Also, she didn't know till the end, that where did Luo Lei and Luo Li find that medicine from, it was so intense, making her curse those two guys constantly in her heart several times. Of course, those two fellows would be already dead by now, and howsoever her curses would be, absolutely they were going in vain.

Under such circumstances, where her entire body was feeling weak and incapable, she could only let Ye Feng take advantage of her. Actually, she was only waiting for an appropriate opportunity to erupt again all of a sudden, and she could smoothly escape from his evil clutches

“Really? You listened clearly.”

Ye Feng sneered: “Today, in the morning, in city Lin'an, a young girl was compelled to jump off the hotel's building to her death, do you still remember that?”

“Ohhhh.”

As Long Xian heard about the morning thing, he glued to the spot, how did this masked man know about this matter?

Suddenly, an expression of disgust crawled on the face of Long Wan'er, and a perplexing thought rushed into her mind, could this kid Long Xian be actually capable of executing such things in the outside world?

“Today, I, as an ordinary citizen, will wipe out an evil doer for sure!”

Ye Feng's Zhenqi quickly rushed out, and the red Zhenqi Sword suddenly emerged out in his hand, pointing at about three metres away lying Long Xian!

“Please no, the great swordsman, mercy! Wan'er, help me, save me!”

As Long Xian's eyes fell on that red Zhenqi coated sword, his blood dried up, and because of his extreme fear, suddenly water leached out between his two legs, causing stain!

“In that hotel, that maiden would have certainly thought so and might have begged you for mercy, but did you forgive her?”

Ye Feng groaned coldly.

It was rightly said, “Whatever is hurtful to you, don't do that to any other person.” This guy Long Xian considered other people's begging very indifferently, that was why Ye Feng wanted now to make him taste, what kind of flavour this despair had.

Then after Ye Feng didn't say anything, just raised his hand and waved it, immediately a bright red light flashed!

Soon, the third corpse fell down the cliff.

.....

“Honestly speaking, be my well-behaved hostage. On the platform ahead, are there people of your Dragon Clan?”

After finished resolving with Long Xian, Ye Feng choked the neck of Long Wan'er, and returned to his original route, and then broke into a run to go towards the mountain platform.

“CoughsKe Ke... there are”

Since Long Wan'er's neck was seized by him, that impeded her breath, moreove,r she didn't take long to understood that since beginning Ye Feng didn't have a crush on her, rather it was his plan all along to capture her as a hostage.

However, what was the purpose behind holding her as a hostage?

Of course, she didn't have even the least bit idea that Ye Feng just wanted to pass through that platform, in order to enter the old tomb relics. Whether it was the identity of a masked man, or his true identity as Ye Feng, in any form if he would appear in front of those people of Dragon Clan, they would never let him pass through. Hence, this was the last option left in the hands of Ye Feng to succeed in his goal.

“That’s good.”

Ye Feng nodded with satisfaction, along with Long Wan’er he gradually moved forward step by step.

Poor Long Wan’er’s current condition was quite pathetic, her whole body was under frequent drug seizures, her cheeks were blushed red, especially because she was being held under duress by Ye Feng, but still unexpectedly she had faintly a very comfortable feeling, which was making her ashamed of herself and resentful, that was why she simply wanted to commit suicide.

Ye Feng simply didn’t have a shred of tenderness towards women, on top of that this Miss Dragon was not his woman at the first place, on the contrary, she was his enemy, hence, he would never show his soft side to his enemy.

When they gradually approached closer to the mountain platform, they finally attracted the attention of some of the members of Dragon Clan.

There were approximately 17 – 18 individuals on the platform, in several groups consisting two and three individuals in each, they were discussing anything mutually. Just a glance was enough for Ye Feng to understand that all of them were the people of the martial arts world. When their eyes shifted towards Ye Feng holding under duress Long Wan’er all the way, immediately the complexion of few 5 – 6 persons paled down.

“Wan’er!”

One among them was considerably a middle-aged man, with straight eyebrows slanting upwards and outwards vertical stroke, knitted his brows, and with extremely quick footsteps he moved forward to welcome them!

Ye Feng raised his eyes and look at that middle-aged man. He was around thirty years of age, was wearing a shallow white long gown, a plain scabbard was hanging from his waist, from head to foot was covered with a kind of refined and courteous atmosphere, making him almost delusional. All these features of him forcing Ye Feng to think that it seemed like as if this guy was someone from the World of the Immortals, with a secret immortal sword.

“Dad

With great difficulty, Long Wan'er put out a word, followed by a signal with her eyes towards that middle-aged man.

Was that refined and courteous middle-aged man, her father?

Ye Feng's mind was already alert and he had also tightened up his guard beforehand, he opened his mouth and in a very threatening manner, said: “No matter who you are, just make a way for me, or I'll strangle her to death! I have to just pass through here, once I leave this place, I'll return your daughter totally intact .”

“Young man, you are actually so bold!”

The refined middle-aged man's eyes were exhibiting cold look, his

straight eyebrows were slanting upwards and outwards, his generous hand slipped and grasped the sword hilt hanging on his waist as if he wanted to begin.

“Mo’ran, wait a minute.”

From behind him an old man was seeing everything, hastily he came up, and whispered something in his ears.

That scene made Ye Feng scowled, if he were at such a level where he had atleast 10 years of Cultivation, then he would have been able now, to hear what the other party was whispering, but unfortunately he had no way to do that.

“Are you called Mo Jiuge?”

The refined man listened to the old man’s words, it seemed like as if he was feeling justified now, he then nodded as he raised his head and looked towards that masked man, Ye Feng, and with solemnity he said: “If you dare hurt my daughter, our Dragon people will travel all over the ends of the earth, and will certainly take your life!”

“Relax.”

Ye Feng smiled softly, by still continued pinching her neck, he kept on walking, and when he came closer almost about five metres away from Long Wan’er’s father, then he suddenly peaked up his speed!

Embracing her tightly in his arms, Ye Feng hastily activated his Rapid

Shadow Immortal Trace to its maximum limit, and as an impact of it, a series of flashing blurred afterimage appeared on the platform! And just in a blink of an eye, by holding Long Wan'er, he crossed the entire mountain platform, and fled into the woods in the opposite direction.

This sudden incident, left Long Mo'ran along with the rest of the Dragon people, gawk. How could this boy have such a noticeably fast speed? Till they could even think to respond, Ye Feng had already disappeared right in front of their eyes, along with Long Wan'er!

“Ha ha ha, Mo'ran its kind of little strange, never imagined that you will have one day of admitting defeat.”

A loud laugh, immediately followed by a satirical sentence, passed out from the other side, actually Dragon Clan and the Great Elder of God Fist Gate were not in good terms with each other, so as to insult Long Mo'ran, he used this satirical way. However, by now, he had neither this idea that Luo Li together with Luo Lei wanted to capture Long Wan'er, nor that they had already been killed by Ye Feng. Or else, he would be more afraid now that his presence could trigger Long Mo'ran's anger and he might fly into a rage because of his two evil pupils.

“Humph.”

Long Mo'ran snorted lightly, without paying attention to the opposite party, he frowned and said: “You guys go and investigate below to see what was going on with that kid Long Xian, simultaneously I'll go behind Wan'er.”

As his voice fell, he immediately cast a light dodge agility, as if he easily

swallowed a deep pool, and then he quickly jumped a step and advanced towards them, to pursue the place from where Ye Feng along with Long Wan'er vanished. He could clearly notice that the present condition of Long Wan'er was very awful, that kind of crimson cheeks she had then, she must not bump into any bewildered person, who might destroy her, for a lifetime

Chapter 071: Enters The Ancient Tomb

The sun had already set in the western sky, and the shaft of remaining sunlight had submerged the entire city, Yanjing.

The last class of Yan Junior High School finally ended in the afternoon, a constant stream of students were getting out of the school gate, either to return home or to have dinner outside, but almost all of the students had one thing in common, that was the topic they were discussing.

“Have you heard that, the first and most beautiful woman of Yan High School/Yanjing University, seems to be engaged with a third-year high school student named Ye Feng!”

{Lastvoice : Yan High School or Yanjing University ... both of these terms will be used interchangeably, hence I have mentioned both of them to avoid future confusion.

Su Menghan is in Yan Junior High School, and

Lin Shiqing is in Yan High School/Yanjing University.}

“Naturally heard that, actually what is the identity of that guy Ye Feng, and would Miss Lin take a fancy to him, unexpectedly?”

“It’s not like that, rather I have heard that the family has forced it.”

“You don’t know anything, they are already living together, ok?”

“Wow, really, is it true?”

A topic like this was cropping up one after another.

Su Menghan was moving towards the school entrance, her pretty and beautiful figure was capturing the attention of numerous students. Popular and admired as the top Xiaohua of Yan Junior High School, her fresh and pure face, her exquisite figure, everything was standing her out from other students, and was making her as the most beautiful landscape.

{Note : Xiaohua – School’s beauty.}

“Hello, things have turned out so noisy and big, don’t you want to find Small Bee and ask about it?”

Ou B finally caught up with her, while panting heavily he asked that with a face covered with a depressed look.

“No, there is no use of it, I trust him.”

Su Menghan said that by piling up a smile on her face, as if she didn’t care about the rumours and slander going on all over the school campus.

“You trust that ass blindly! Today, there are just the students of Yan High School/Yanjing University looking for him to trouble him, all around it has more than 70 batches of students, consisting of a hundred male students or even more, in each batch!”

Ou B continued saying in a scolding tone: “That boy, hidden from us so deep like this, in my opinion, now this little should certainly ensure his hiding, or if he feels like then he should seek asylum! Just take a look around, those fat bodies looking for him, are so strong, like Sumo wrestlers or even more like boxer community people, if he gets punched by them just once, that wouldn’t be a joke

“It will not.”

Su Menghan said that still stubbornly, a pair of her beautiful eyes were glittering firmly.

“Hey, I am telling you

Ou B wanted to make her aware of the consequences of the current situation, but just when he barely thought to go forward, he was actually blocked by four guys of Heavenly Serpent Gang, thus he had no choice left but to look at her helplessly, as she was departing.

Su Menghan didn’t turn around, instead, she went straight towards the car, which was brought by Heavenly Serpent Gang to pick her up, and then like a wisp of smoke, she went far away, swiftly. She had never socialised with the boys in the school, nor have ever shown a good face to them, just because Ye Feng had a good relation with Ou B, she exchanged a few words with him, which was extremely rare.

But in the eyes of Ou B, didn’t it look like Su Menghan was too stubborn? Such a big matter was breathing strongly all around the school campus, even though unexpectedly she had held an unshaken trust for Ye Feng, which was simply impervious!

However, the first beauty of Yanjing University/Yan High School, Lin Shiqing.... Ah.....

That sort of strong woman, endowed with both such a terrific talent and incomparable beauty, could really have a liking for Ye Feng?

Ou B was being a bit sceptical, only if Ye Feng were the legendary martial artist from the martial arts world, then it would be possible. Since the world of martial arts didn't get involved in the matter of the worldly things, then how could it be possible that the marriage of the direct line female, of the ruling family, was set with a common person without any martial arts skills?

He pulled out his cell phone, once again he gave a call to Ye Feng , but as expected he got a prompt message that call couldn't be put through, hence resentfully he decided to go home, as he had no other choice left.

.....

At this time on the other side, holding the weak and fragrant body of under duress Long Wan'er, Ye Feng was speeding away to dash out wildly.

The map left behind by Zhu Bainiao, he draped it over his shoulders to blaze a trail, actually the route taken by him was getting more and more desolated, but soon, finally he approached the destination, the entrance of the ancient tomb vestige.

“Hurry up let me go quickly, I can’t stand it anymore

Long Wan’er while leaning on his chest was breathing heavily, a pair of her beautiful delicate hands were softly embracing Ye Feng’s body. She felt that the efficacy of the drug within her body, must have to be suppressed, or else if it would erupt out just once, then the only god would know what might happen.

“Your father is chasing behind us, if I let you go, wouldn’t it be like I am courting my death?”

Ye Feng groaned lightly, and simply decided not to pay attention to her.

As far the action of those two fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate was concerned, Ye Feng despised it very much, in order to obtain a woman, was there such a need to be so vicious? Presently, Long Wan’er who was deeply immersed in his bosom, was making Ye Feng feel strangely an intense strong desire for her, however, nothing could be done, since whoever would touch the soft delicate body of Long Wan’er and feel it’s charm, wouldn’t he also feel the same way, just like what Ye Feng was desiring for currently?

During the period when he was in the World of the Immortals, he had constantly followed his master, hence, he didn’t get any chance to have access to any woman. However, after his rebirth here in the modern city, he had actually taken possession of Su Menghan as well as Long Wan’er, both of them, one after another, and had also taken small advantages of these two great beautiful women.

Previously, when Ye Feng had his first encounter with Su Menghan, he very much liked her honesty, kindness and pure-heartedness, but at present while being with Long Wan'er, he didn't feel a thing about her.

However, now, by constantly embracing the delicate fragrant body of a young girl, was making him have some strange thoughts

His Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was still under use, all the way a faint blurred afterimage was continuously appearing and disappearing quickly. Just within a period of short one minute, Ye Feng covered a distance of two kilometres, until his Zhenqi finally exhausted, which gradually slowed down his pace as well.

The whole body of Long Wan'er was being hot and dry, since her mind was fully occupied with several types of her strange lustful desire. Just a mere thought that Ye Feng was running with her, was making her flushed, that she didn't even notice his speed which was incredibly fast, otherwise, it might have surely surprised her incomparably.

It just took one minute, and Ye Feng with his super fast speed, had already left her father far behind.

Finally, at this moment, a small cliff appeared in front of Ye Feng , which a bit delighted his heart, wasn't that the entrance of Shang Dynasty ancient tomb vestige, as said by Zhu Bainiao?

By putting his single hand around the slender willow waist of Long Wan'er, Ye Feng quickly moved forward, on the basis of Zhu Bainiao's instruction he finally found a sufficiently thick and solid vine, after then together with her, he seized an opportunity to start descending down the

rock.

Although they were two people, but Long Wan'er was not heavy, that vine was fully able to withstand their weight.

After descending several metres, Ye Feng finally stopped in a gigantic stone, probably enough to accommodate the size of a truck, and then he loosened the thick solid vine.

He then exerted an effort and finally pulled out that vine, so as to avoid being caught up by Long Wan'er's father, confronting him was not a funny thing after all. Just by looking at the temperament of that refined man, Ye Feng right away got an idea that the opposite party had absolutely possessed few dozens of cultivation. Moreover the opposite party was gifted with a very strange skill, if he would pull out his sword, in that case, Ye Feng would surely prove to be far from being a suitable opponent for the opposite party.

Ye Feng dug out an already crushed flat black colored packet from his bosom , and then he pulled out a map, since he wanted to look into the map to see whether there was any danger or not in the ancient tomb.

Long Wan'er was softly curled up in his arms, suddenly she resumed her senses, looked carefully around her and discovered that along with Ye Feng, she was currently present at a place, which had only one access. It was a narrow and small crevice, possibly to be used to pass and go inside the cliff.

Otherwise, she might have jumped off the cliff, but when she glanced around herself, then noticed that there was only fog and wind lingering

around, jumping down the cliff was absolutely out of the question.

She looked up and saw the overhanging cliff, but again she found the same thing, fog and wind lingering around everywhere, which made her heart very disappointed and depressed. Infact, the dark secret passage was not at all a good option for her to choose, since as the matter stood, if she chose this way to escape, her father would never save her, right?

Also, she didn't know why did this guy in the mask bring her here and what did he want to do with her.....

Suddenly, she noticed that Ye Feng was staring at a map holding in his hand probably very attentively, she couldn't help but her heart moved a bit.

Opportunity should never be missed, it was the time to begin!

All of a sudden, ten years of Cultivation mastered Long Wan'er's inner Qi exploded out abruptly, by twisting her body, she hastily jumped out of Ye Feng's arms, and by getting on her feet she snatched away the map from his hand in one fell swoop, which was immediately followed by a move 'Mysterious Dragon Pendulum Tail', aiming directly at the chest of Ye Feng to kick him over!

The sudden upheaval of Long Wan'er petrified him and left him extremely startled, but fortunately, his wariness had already prepared his heart strong enough to handle these reactions, hence he quickly responded to this, by putting into use the last trace of his already exhausted Zhenqi , to activate his last trump card, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, in order to escape the violent kick of Long Wan'er!

What a tremendous force and strength her foot had! Imagine, if Ye Feng were kicked just a moment ago, then that kick would have definitely thrown him down the cliff, and by now he would have ended up dead, exactly like the fate of previously met fellow apprentices, Luo Lei and Luo Li.

As Ye Feng raised his head again, exactly then he remained surprised for a moment to find that Long Wan'er's soft and exquisite graceful body had already disappeared, but then he noticed that she was leading to the tomb and ran into that crevice of ancient tomb vestige.

Ye Feng didn't want to think about any stuff, without further delay he took to the heels to chase after her.

It was getting more and more dark outside, as well as inside the crevice it was so pitch-dark that Ye Feng who ran inside only for a short moment, but when he stretched his hand, he couldn't even see his own five fingers

Chapter 072: Inside The Tomb Vestige

Ye Feng advanced towards the ancient tomb relic and ran inside it, suddenly his eyes were smeared with darkness, and he felt like everything around him was entirely invisible. If he had owned ten years of Cultivation, then he could have relied on the Immortal Technique “Soul Search” to see even in the darkness, but now he had no way to do that.

Fortunately, he already had done preparation for it.

From his black packet, he took out a small flashlight, which was earlier prepared by Zhao Yibei, in addition, there were also several No. 7 batteries arranged by him as the reserve, so as to persist it for several days, uninterrupted. Moreover, In order to increase the persistent use period of the flashlight, Zhao Yibei also prepared that type of flashlight which might not give quite a bright light, but was suitable enough for Ye Feng.

Once the flashlight was switched on, a crevice channel finally appeared before Ye Feng, leading the way ahead, which could only allow the next person through. However, it had suddenly widened about hundred metres ahead. Ye Feng clearly knew that the entrance of ancient tomb vestige had finally arrived.

The traces and shadow of Long Wan'er had long gone, but Ye Feng must overtake the opposite party as soon as possible, because, without the ,map, it would be extremely difficult for him to continue in this ancient tomb. After all he was not a specialised professional tomb raider. Whether to talk about his skills or the tools he had prepared for it, was

still far from Zhu Bainiao's comparison.

He covered around hundred metres of distance in just 32 steps, then after he arrived at a small stone chamber, the other side of which had a door, which had already been damaged, naturally that was destroyed by Zhu Bainiao.

There was no other way to proceed, hence he entered that stone chamber. Officially, finally he entered the ancient tomb relic now. In the dim light of a flashlight, alone in the dark, a stone passage covered with vine appeared in front of him all the way downwards, although he couldn't see the end.

“Atmosphere seems a little moist, on the basis of tracking the words said by Zhu Bainiao, there must be a large underground lake in the central part of this ancient tomb

Ye Feng heart made a speculation, he assiduously was trying to find some clues from the left traces of Long Wan'er. His walk suddenly turned into a trot and then he broke into a run, rapidly down the stairs and arrived at a horizontal road.

Flashlights were illuminating towards both sides, Ye Feng found that after a certain distance, on the walls of the corridor of both sides, there would have been flashlights, but unfortunately, they were immediately extinguished.

Just a second ago, a flashlight disappeared all of a sudden right in front of him, Ye Feng guessed that it could be no one else but Long Wan'er, who took away the illumination.

“This young lady actually is pretty smart

In his heart, Ye Feng secretly praised her, but was also very dignified, because very obviously Long Wan'er was not at all a good option to deal with.

When he proceeded to run along the corridor, then after covering around half a kilometer of distance, he felt that the things had started to become awful, since unexpectedly it turned out to be actually a crossroad existed there.

He hurriedly squatted down his body, and aimed the light of his flashlight at the traces on the ground, he just wanted to find out some clues, and he quickly succeeded in that. Soon he found the dust on the road leading to the left, was a bit messy, also there were several shallow footprints present on that road.

“This road, doesn't lead to a tomb chamber, right? Isn't it a blind alley?”

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows a tiny bit, and pondered that the other party was, by no means a stupid person, she had the map in her hands, so wasn't it highly unlikely that she would still compel herself towards the blind alley?

Regarding the map, in a hurry he could only remember the beginning route of this tomb journey as well as the road leading to the direction of the central underground lake. About the rest of the details, he didn't even get enough time to look into it before it got snatched away by Long

Wan'er.

No matter how, but this road didn't seem to be very far, therefore he decided to go and explore it out. Quickly he ran along the left side of the corridor. All the way, he saw the cliff's rock was very well-preserved, it was very ancient, time-honored with a long history. By any chance, if some historians arrived here, they would definitely exclaim out in amazement, for discovering this treasure. What a pity, these things were completely pointless and insignificant to Ye Feng.

Soon he arrived at the terminus of this passage, a periphery of the tomb chamber.

“Damn, I was tricked.”

Ye Feng carefully examined that little tomb, but there was no trail of her, there was just a deathly silence which had taken over the surrounding area. In the centre of that tomb, there was a pit, who knew who was buried in it, Ye Feng was totally disinclined to think about it.

Since then, he didn't dare to underestimate her. Actually falsely making traces on the crossroad, delaying him by distracting him towards a dead end, it seemed like to pursue her again, had turned out to be a very difficult task now.

“I can only go to that central underground lake first.”

The moment Ye Feng decided that, he instantly set off.

Zhu Bainiao had said that at the beginning of the ancient tomb, there was no such underground lake, but later on it naturally got formed, water naturally accumulated and lake came into existence directly in the centre part of this tomb chamber.

The place from where Zhu Bainiao discovered that Lingshi, it was also the same place where, for the first time he saw the beautiful back view of someone, which was similar to Su Feiying!

Therefore, Ye Feng must go to look into that since he didn't succeed in finding out Long Wan'er, he could only go to the underground lake to check and explore that area, afterwards he decided to return to the original road. He would try to climb up that gigantic rock to get outside the cliff. However, by taking into consideration his current level of Cultivation, climbing several meters up the rock, would undoubtedly be very difficult challenge for him.

A hope was there that the underground lake must render some fruitful results to him, this was what he was anticipating right now.

All the way back, he took several wriggles and spiral turnings, he was proceeding along the route drawn on the map, saved in his memory. Step by step he was advancing towards the underground lake situated somewhere around the central part of that ancient tomb.

His heart was palpitating, the closer he was getting to the underground lake, the quicker his heart was jumping, out of excitement.

His beautiful female master, Su Feiying had really appeared here before? If not, then why did that figure look exactly like her? If it was

really her picture, why had she come over to a place like this ancient tomb vestige?

He had too many questions boiling up in his mind, but there was a hope that just after arriving at the underground lake, they all could be answered.

The distance was not very far away.

The flashlight was still on, Ye Feng wandered for more than ten minutes, soon, finally he was about to reach the destination. As he turned a corner, the light of his flashlight suddenly faded, but simultaneously another hazy white light appeared covering the dim light of his flashlight.

“Arrived!”

Ye Feng turned off the light and raised his head to take a broad view around his surroundings. He noticed that whatever Zhu Bainiao had said was 100 % true, a ray of dim gentle white light had flooded the entire space, that was naturally the big legendary luminous night pearl in the center of the tomb chamber, but unfortunately, it had already sunk to the bottom of the lake, which could now only send out such a dim hazy shimmer.

Ye Feng moved two steps forward to see the panorama of the entire central tomb.

He only saw a square-shaped tomb chamber of several hundred metres

square, into a large central hollow, which had been filled up by the limpid underground lake water. But around that underground lake, there were some vine plants widely spread. Under that dim white light, there was no longer feeling of that kind of previously experienced deathly stillness, instead it was embellished all around, and was exhibiting the aura of the paradise.

In the lake actually swimming fishes could be seen very vividly, quite brisk and lively. Moreover, the water plants were appearing very luxuriant, the ray of the legendary luminous pearl was penetrating the water plant through the water surface, resembling like a very thin and white layer of yarn had draped over the entire space.

After arriving here, Ye Feng burst of freshness and comfort feeling, since unexpectedly he felt the presence of the divine and wonderful world's spiritual influence in the lake!

Although very weak, but it actually truly existed here, no wonder Zhu Bainiao could be able to find Lingshi "dark green stone" here. Zhu Bainiao was an unprofessional man, who was not an authentic martial artist from the world of martial arts, even though he saw Lingshi. Without knowing it had any effect and power, he simply picked it up conveniently and threw away to Ou A, and by luck Ou A sold it at such an undervalued price to Ye Feng.

Ye Feng walked to the edge of the lake, and as he was thinking something, suddenly an uncertain beautiful figure of a woman, rushed over and threw herself on him, from another side.

"Who is this?"

Ye Feng only got the time to shout loudly frantically, and suddenly he felt a sudden burst of fragrance in his nostrils, and the next moment his whole body heavily fell to the ground.

A feel of the soft touch but full of elasticity spread all over his body. This aromatic body, wasn't this the body of Long Waner?

Surprisingly, he was thrown to the ground by her!

The ray of light of the bright pearl of night was too hazy, and it was extremely difficult to see anything clearly, but still he could feel that the situation she was in currently, was very bad, actually her whole body was burning hot, disheveled, being short of breath as if she was about to throw up. Moreover, it seemed like the efficacy of the drug had already erupted, and because of that, she was burning with that sort of lustful desire.

As her smooth, plentiful, pretty generous, tightly sticking out breasts, were closely pasted upon his body, that soft and smooth touch, had all of a sudden made Ye Feng's little thing show the sign of erection!

Chapter 073: Pie In The Sky

At this moment in time, the moon and the stars were sparsely scattered in the sky outside the world, whereas, mountain platform was flooded with several martial arts people, regardless of whether it was the group of the people of Dragon Clan, or the elder of God Fist Gate, or later approached the crazy male-female pair of Heavenly Sword Palace and Huang Lao, all were badly keyed up, the so-called anxious expression had clouded all over their faces.

Previously met, that round-faced woman, who was dressed in a black robe, stained with fresh blood here and there, was trying to say something with a very mournful and distressing looking face.

“Wearing a mask, and holding a red sword, that man appeared out of nowhere! And awfully slaughtered Li Junlong along with Zhu Bainiao , moreover, the Telepathic grass was also taken away by him!”

“Wearing a mask?”

Almost at the same time, some people suddenly recalled the incident which had taken place during the dusk, when holding under duress Long Wan'er in his bosom, that young guy passed through this platform, right in front of their eyes. The gazes of almost all the individuals of Dragon Clan shifted directly towards Dragon Clan's one person.

Clad in a white gown, Long Mo'ran's inner qi suddenly started shaking with anger.

Actually, today he wanted to buy that Telepathic grass, as a birthday gift for Long Wan'er. He had never imagined that the Telepathic grass had long been taken away by the same masked man, making him as futile as carrying water in a bamboo basket!

Not only that, as he was pursuing the masked man carrying his daughter, Long Wan'er, he suddenly arrived at a towering overhanging cliff, and when he leaned forward to have a look downward, then he noticed that the entire region was wrapped by the fog and winds, making the appearance of the bottom totally invisible.

That guy, he wouldn't have jumped off the cliff holding Long Wan'er, would he? The mere thought that his daughter was trapped in a very dangerous situation, was making Long Mo'ran precipitate, he was getting intolerably anxious, but there was no way out.

"The current situation is this, both of my disciples, Luo Li and Luo Lei haven't come back yet, Long Mo'ran, that handsome young guy of your Clan hasn't also returned yet, has he?"

The elder of God Fist Gate solemnly asked that, long before he used a satirical tone while talking to Long Mo'ran, but currently, he was totally out of his mood to launch a satire again.

Not only coming to here didn't result in any profit, but the Telepathic grass was also stolen away, moreover, the traces of two young people of his Clan had completely disappeared, most likely they might have encountered a violent treachery. To sum up, Long Mo'ran, had not only suffered a huge financial loss, but also had lost two children of his clan, hence he was under such a tremendous pressure where he could upside-down the entire soldiers, completely, to find them.

Of course, compared to Dragon Clan's situation, God Fist Gate was in a better situation.

Not Only Dragon Clan's Long Xian was fraught with grim possibilities, but also the most talented person of Dragon Clan's younger generation, Long Wan'er was seized as a hostage, and seemingly was drugged as well. Such a long time had rolled on, but there was not the slightest bit of any news of them, what might have happened to them was quite obvious.

So far as the martial artists of these two school of martial arts were concerned, since they gloated over the misfortunes of others, they departed from this world silently.

The complexion of Long Mo'ran had paled down, if that masked man reappeared before him, he surely would bring into action his Clan's most exquisite swordsman, to kill and behead him at once, just like he did 20 years ago, when he got the master of Ye Clan, beheaded to death!

"Report this to the head of the house, that we couldn't find Young lady!"

Soon, the master of Dragon Clan hurried back, and while sweating profusely, he said.

"Continue searching for them!"

Long Mo'ran waved his hand instructing them, his white gown was floating under the moonlight, however gloominess had taken over his

mood. Today, until he got success in finding out some trails of his daughter along with that masked man on this mountain, he would never leave this place.

“Roger.”

While on the other hand, on one gloomy side of the mountain platform, Heavenly Sword Palace’s crazy pair, that man and woman looked at each other, and exchanged a sinister smile.

They thought that they arrived a bit late here, when drugged Long Wan’er was already captured as hostage unexpectedly, and the people of Long Clan were turned out to very incompetent as well. However, such an attractive young girl was taken hold by the so-called masked man, it was really unfortunate

Certainly, the man of Heavenly Sword Palace wouldn’t care whether he stood out first or what would be his reward, so long as he could have enjoyment out of this, he would never consider this trip went in vain.

They didn’t say anything, just looked at closely standing Huang Lao, then they jumped a step and left the place. They vowed not to rest until they would find Long Wan’er. Also, they didn’t say anything about the Telepathic grass at this time, however, regarding the Gold Leaf Grass from the previous time, they must demand interest for it, later !

By squinting his eyes, Huang Lao looked at the eyes of those two people, and groaned lightly, then he also moved sideways to depart.

It wasn’t like he was looking for Long Wan’er, instead it was that Masked man who had stirred his interest, he just wanted to find traces of

that man.

“If the guess is correct, this person not only killed the greedy and corrupt Wolf Sword, but also the two fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate. Moreover, his courage didn’t stop here, he also removed Hidden Immortal Faction’s Li Junlong from his way, and captured under duress Long wan’er as a hostage, his courage and wisdom are incredibly strong! What a pity, I didn’t get the chance to receive him as my apprentice.....”

Silhouette of the mountain platform all of a sudden became sparse, under the moonlight glory, the deathly paled facial expression of Cuckoo was appearing.

Since Li Junlong died, would she return to her school ‘Hidden Immortal Faction’ to explain things regarding his death and so on?

He was one of the disciples in Hidden Immortal School who used to give training of Hidden Weapon Technique to the younger generation! Until now, her brain was unceasingly contaminated with Li Junlong’s flying head scene, as well as the sneering face of that masked man present at the scene, was also haunting her continuously

.....

Outside this tensed and gloomy atmosphere, a matchless and exquisite scene was going on inside the tomb.

Outside the tomb, Long Wan’er threw a kick at Ye Feng and quickly

snatched away the map. However, because of that, all of a sudden the efficacy within her body erupted thoroughly, and made her completely incapable of suppressing it again. She tried resisting it, and with the help of the map, she arrived near the most conspicuous underground lake. But finally the time arrived when she completely failed to hold it anymore, her consciousness had also started getting more and more fuzzier, and her lustful desire was burning like a fire.

During that moment, she saw Ye Feng appeared, could she still endure it anymore? Instead, all of a sudden she rushed and threw herself on him.

“Damn!”

Thunderstruck, Ye Feng was lying on the ground staring foolishly, since he was knocked down on the ground heavily by Long Wan’er, his resistance wasn’t working at all.

In a very short period of time, she had actually reached a decade of Cultivation. Even after absorbing Hair Ornamental Blue Spirit Grass, Ye Feng’s Cultivation had reached just four years, literally after doubling it, it would still hit only eight years.

To compare the strength between them, still the difference was quite a noticeable point!

Under the dim white light of the legendary luminous pearl, her soft and smooth silk dress slowly slipped from her body, making her snow white skin like porcelain, visible to him, which suddenly jolted out his heart and soul, and mesmerized him under the supple halo, as if it was the

world's most exquisite and wonderful art.

Although Ye Feng previously had accidentally experienced her breathtaking amusing beauty, but probably it had so intensely stimulated his feelings now than the previous time. Her body seemed like exuding bright light like moonlight's brightness, Ye Feng immediately felt that his blood suddenly rushed upward towards his brain, and his brain started releasing heat.

Even if he wanted to resist, now the girl would not agree!

“Don't move I want to”

She pressed her white hand on his chest roughly, her pair of beautiful eyes were getting blurred, she lowered her face and tore apart his cloth, and threw it to one side.

Under this kind of circumstance, if Ye Feng would really want to resist, then it would be possible only by killing her. Regretfully, he couldn't do such a thing. A proverb rightly said, 'flowers worthy to be folded straight off, if not treated well, it would result in blossomless and empty branches. If a man was a real man, then how could he be loathsome?

Consequently, Ye Feng gave up in his heart, and extended both hands out

Within the lake, silently swimming fishes, unwillingly stirring the inverted reflection of both of them every now and then, as if they were embellishing the general appearance of the paradise.

That young girl's long and beautiful hair was hanging down gently, accompanied with a pure and delicate fragrance, lingering around the side of Ye Feng's face.

“Damn!”

At such a critical moment, Ye Feng suddenly uttered that.

The voice, although very destructive to the current atmosphere, but Ye Feng couldn't help but shout out, as he had really no other way to control that.

He was so intensely shocked, as if he got pierced deeply through his inner feelings, so he uttered this sound.

Because when these two people were really intimately close to each other, he finally detected that the constitution of Miss Dragon was actually extremely rare to be seen in the World of the Immortals, and it was called "the body of immortal arteries"!

Pick up the treasure!

Or to send her back home!

Has anyone seen 'Pie in the sky'? This is it!

Her special constitution, the existence of such a physical constitution

was extremely rare to be seen in the World of the Immortals, he had never expected that he could see such thing right here on Earth!

Chapter 074: The Body Of Immortal Arteries

In the World of the Immortals, regardless of whether it was the head of the Immortal School, or the Elder of the devil realm, most of them had more than one woman. As a matter of fact, it was neither to manifest their authorities, nor to attain their certain demands, rather it was because there in the World of the Immortals, there were many rare special physiques, which were of great benefits for the Cultivation practices.

For instance, the body of the immortal arteries, which is considered as one of the leading special physiques in the World of the Immortals, not only excels at pacifying the speed of its own master far more than the ordinary people, but along with its master, it also gives advantage to her husband, by boosting up his practicing speed.

The woman gifted with the body of immortal arteries, normally possesses smooth and flexible meridians, with several hidden acupuncture points, which are far more than an average person's acupuncture points. These acupuncture points have the tendency to naturally start storing up the divine and spiritual energy right after her birth, and the moment that woman starts practicing, these acupuncture points automatically open up, releasing and letting this divine and spiritual energy fall directly into her Dantian, which later on follows by a sudden enhancement of her Cultivation, even more than ten years, at just one fell swoop!

This process is called "Open Holes."

In the World of the Immortals, only the incredibly powerful man had

the capability to take hold of such woman as his wife, otherwise, he might be defeated by that powerful woman, and could also be killed as well. Even more, his whole family could be extinguished, till his nine generations! Also, these females, possessing such body of immortal arteries, were themselves very powerful, with a high level of cultivation, almost at the similar level just like her strength, so there was not a single man who could subdue her.

“One, two, three, four, five, six and seven, surprisingly there are seven hidden acupuncture points in her body, the body of immortal arteries with seven points, amazing! Maximum Nine points are normally considered as the highest number of acupuncture points!”

Ye Feng counted it down, and was overjoyed at the turn of the events, since it was a very pleasant and delightful surprise for him.

Seven hidden acupuncture points, it seemed like if she began practising her Immortal Cultivation Technique, then it would promote her practice speed by 70%, which was immensely higher than a common person's ability, and was certainly enough for anyone to turn into a big shot or an Elder in the World of the Immortals!

Unfortunately, there was no one on the Earth with such eyes, who could see this type of body with immortal arteries. Seemingly, Long Wan'er had not gone through this “Open Hole” process, and her Cultivation was still in the sealed state. What a waste of such body!

Presently, Ye Feng's heart was unusually intertwined.

As he could feel several hidden acupuncture points in her body, which

had been storing up massive divine and spiritual energy since her birth. Considering the fact that if she would be currently twenty years old, then her these seven hidden acupuncture points might have collected a great amount of spiritual energy by now, which would be more than enough to let her Cultivation take a sudden leap of fourteen years in a blow, which was really quite a terrific figure!

If some day she would start practising Immortal Cultivation technique, then she could very easily absorb all of this divine and spiritual energy, which had been getting stored since long ago, and this in return would let her Cultivation enhance enormously in a noticeably short period of time.

However at present, the situation Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were trapped in, was in a way quite favorable for him, since he could also easily absorb her spiritual energy for his own purpose, to let his Cultivation hit a full eighteen years, in just one move, to become a dap hand!

Because, these two individuals were currently having the most intimate relationship

How about, take hold of her body and suck in all of her spiritual energy present within her body, then run away and forget about her including this incident?

Ye Feng was perplexed because, if all of a sudden all of her body's divine and spiritual energy got extinct, then certainly she wouldn't survive any longer, very soon she would die. Even if it would be a matter of absorbing just three to five years of the spiritual energy, it would also damage her meridians awfully, letting her seriously injured, and

consequently she could no longer practice throughout her life.

The attraction of suddenly achieving a gigantic rise in his level of Cultivation, but this was actually a dilemma of choice.

Though, Ye Feng was not a good man, but was not a wicked person as well.

Although Long Wan'er had been opposing him everywhere since beginning, but by placing himself in her shoes, he could clearly realize that in fact, she wasn't much at fault, all this happened mostly because of the spontaneous misunderstandings.

For attaining a great strength, could he drag her to death?

In the current relationship between these two people, Ye Feng really was not being able to get down his hand, no matter how, but at present Long Wan'er was more like his woman.

“Such being the case, in the end, I should be thoroughly responsible for everything. Moreover, this woman, possessing the body of immortal arteries, is my woman now, I am in gain in a big way, right? Why should I sway by personal gains and losses?”

In fact, Ye Feng's heart had already made a decision, when he confronted this situation, he easily considered Long Wan'er as his woman, otherwise on the basis of his personality, how possibly he could think whether he should show tender affection towards her or not, but could he discard this golden opportunity of promoting his Cultivation?

Since she was his woman now, he certainly would not hurt her. If she was destined to be his, then there would be ample time at his hand, meanwhile he would also try to lift these misunderstandings by then, then he could have plenty of time and opportunities to absorb her divine and spiritual energy.

But for now, Ye Feng temporarily couldn't let the opposite party know his real identity.

By the way, what kind of relationship existed between Dragon Clan and Ye Clan? This relationship would be definitely awful, since Dragon Clan was responsible for the destruction of Ye Clan, otherwise Ye Wentian would not have solemnly warned him like that.

As of now, he could only wait for the propitious time, then only he could make her know the fact.

After figuring out everything thoroughly, Ye Feng tuned a little bit unscrupulous, by stroking her delicate white skin, he slowly turned over his body to press her under him. Meanwhile, silently he raked out the divine and spiritual energy present within her body in her hidden acupuncture points, and slowly started absorbing it.

If she would not have run into Ye Feng, then her this spiritual energy would never have been found ever by anyone on the earth. If Ye Feng absorbed an year of her energy to upgrade his own Cultivation, it wouldn't definitely be a big deal. Moreover, absorbing little bit of her spiritual energy, wouldn't cause any injury to her body.

“If there were not so many factors like family existed, then.....”

Ye Feng’s heart sighed a bit, as he was thinking that, if these two people would stay together, every day and night ,around 10-15 days in a row, then in that case, he would definitely be able to safely absorb her spiritual energy, to promote his Cultivation to the level of 18 years.

As far as Long Wan’er’s Cultivation was concerned, he didn’t know whether it was feasible or not, as he knew already that the people of this planet ‘Earth’ didn’t possess Dan in their Dantian.

Could it be possible that his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring could produce Core Dan for others as well?

Ye Feng hadn’t tested it yet, also he wouldn’t dare to rashly examine it on the body of Long Wan’er.

At this moment, like a beautiful panther, Long Wan’er was struggling, was looking lively and elegant, and exquisitely was swaying her body from side to side under Ye Feng’s body, as if she was nicely coordinating with his movement naturally.

Embracing her smooth, delicate and exquisite body, Ye Feng actually didn’t dare to be too substantial, as he was afraid he might hurt her and cause severe pain to her body. But in fact, in comparison to him, Long Wan’er was more enthusiastic, she had no idea from where did those two guys of God Fist Gate bring that drug, which was really immensely strong.

Soon her enthusiasm infected Ye Feng, but her eyes were shedding a few tears, making Ye Feng slightly distressed. Although she was subconscious but perhaps she still knew about the current situation and was desperately resisting, but unfortunately she wasn't able to nullify the function of efficacy.

Four years and six months

Four years and nine months

Constantly they were moving their smooth statures cleanly and mutually, as Ye Feng was continuously absorbing the divine and spiritual energy of the opposite party, and gradually concealing it in his own hidden acupuncture points, letting his Cultivation grow slowly.

After a long time, as soon as this young girl's passion and enthusiasm calmed down, the fervour of bund ashore extinguished finally, letting the atmosphere tranquil and undisturbed.

At this time, Ye Feng reached a five-year of Cultivation, finally!

Now, whether it was diversionary technique Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, or Zhenqi sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, all had become quite handy for him and he could use them proficiently now. He would be fully able now to battle with those martial arts practitioners possessing a decade of Cultivation!

He had a feeling that even if he encountered those two people of Heavenly Sword Palace, it appeared like he could although with a bit of

difficulty, but stand against them relying on his current strength.

Of course, he still accepted that if he would run into that sort of high ranked people like Huang Lao or Long Mo'ran, he would definitely be not the match for these two fellows. The former had 30 years of Cultivation, while Long Mo'ran was the head of the Dragon Clan. Was it really so easy to deal with them? Not to mention about Ye Wentian, that old monster was at unfathomable level, hence, Ye Feng didn't need to think about him yet.

At this moment, Long Wan'er was sleeping deeply and quietly, as her tears were hanging on her delicate face, and was looking extremely delicate, as if was arousing people's pity.

After being absorbed an year of Cultivation, although she was not injured, but was somewhat unavoidably tired. Ye Feng tried to fix up her cloth by finding her layers of clothing, very awkwardly he helped her put on cloth, by avoiding touching her smooth white skin, but his heart was still feeling hot.

“This girl, when she will wake up, she will not take things too hard to commit suicide, will she? Or will she try to kill me first, and then she would commit suicide?”

Ye Feng grew more and more tensed, that he must have to think of a way, to certainly take hold of Long Wan'er, when she would be completely in a stabilised condition.

Chapter 075: The Young Girl Wakes Up

Faint and hazy white light gradually streamed into the eyes.

When Long Wan'er woke up and opened her pair of beautiful eyes, she found her upper half of the body was resting against the wall, on the soft vine. She then noticed that there was no one around, which really startled her and she remained staring blankly.

What might have happened?

Immediately a burst of pain one after another hit her heavily, making her finally recall everything, and in a split second her complexion turned pale and her shoulders shuddered.

What did she do?

Snatched a map, fled into the ancient tomb, the efficacy erupted, caught a person —

It was that masked man!

She finally vaguely remembered the series of events that had happened before!

She couldn't bring herself to accept it for a while, she rolled up her delicate and charming body, and squatted down in the corner, and

started shedding tears. Under the dim white light of the legendary bright pearl, which was peeking from inside the lake's bottom, her solitary silhouette was appearing helpless as if it was provoking people to feel pity for her again.

At this time, she saw a neatly arranged thing around her.

A map, as if some words had been written on the back of it, unexpectedly it had not been taken away.

She stretched out her trembling snow white hands, turned over the map of that ancient tomb, and saw a row of some ugly handwriting, the writing style was too shoddy.

“You are mine. Want to kill me? Then just get out of here alive.”

In order to prevent her from committing suicide, Ye Feng left behind this note written by him, although his words were too bad and were looking quite ugly, but nothing could be done.

At this point of time, he was quietly hiding in the side, while consolidating his Cultivation, he constantly kept a keen eye on her. The moment he would notice that she was going to commit suicide or any other similar signs, he would instantly rush out to prevent her.

If not, then her leaving this place safely, would be the best thing for him.

If by any chance the eyes of these two people fell at each other now,

then unchangeably they would stand up to fight with each other. Although, Ye Feng had upgraded his Cultivation with her help, but still he wasn't at all interested to stake his life together with his own woman, now, in this fight of life and death.

So far as the map of the tomb was concerned, Ye Feng had already taken advantage of her deep slumber, and had jotted down everything in his heart firmly. Also, leaving behind the map to her wouldn't be risky anyhow, since it wasn't related to her.

“Kill you, is killing you going to be useful

Long Wan'er softly whispered: “But, letting you go, would also be not good.”

By embracing her knees, she slowly curled up against the nearby wall covered by soft vine, with a trace of dull and lifeless eyes. This matter had really caused a terrific blow on her, no matter who had changed her life, it wasn't easy for her to brisk out of this tomb, normally.

Without being in a hurry, unworriedly, Ye Feng was patiently waiting, from one side.

He was just waiting patiently for her to leave this ancient tomb safely, as he believed that outside her father would be certainly searching for her crazily all over the mountains and the plains; there she wouldn't get the opportunity to commit suicide. Moreover, he also had to stay in this tomb little longer, to find even a little trace of his master, Su Feiying.

It goes without saying that Ye Feng was little dependent on his beautiful female master. Currently, he was thinking that if by any chance, his master would also be here, then to attain a hundred years of Cultivation, wouldn't be a joke, and there wouldn't be so much trouble.

“Depending on others, what kind of man I am!”

Ye Feng smiled as if he self-ridiculed himself, and shook his head, as he clearly knew that men always want to be successful, and for that, the key is to rely on yourself. Naturally, this didn't affect and bring down his enthusiasm to find Su Feiying. No matter how, but she was the only one who was the closest person to him.

Long Wan'er squatted down against the wall for a long time, completely motionless. Through the white light, Ye Feng could only see her earnestly buried in tears, with slightly trembling shoulders, that was an incomparably sad appearance.

She kept on sobbing like that around half an hour, and then suddenly she raised her head: “Won't you come out?”

Her melodious voice just like an oriole echoed everywhere, it was still as pleasant to listen as before, but actually it had taken a little delicacy, even more than that, it had become deeply touching.

Her voice suddenly jolted his heart and startled him, had she already noticed?

“No, it can't be possible, she is just trying to trick me. Since, she doesn't

possess Immortal Cultivation, moreover she has just a decade of cultivation, hence she can never use the Immortal technique “Soul Search” to feel his presence.”

Ye Feng soon understood that this was just a clever strategy of her to drag him out, therefore, he decided to restrain from any movement.

“I can feel you, you’re out in the vicinity, Just come out, come out in front of me!”

She said that as she crying, her voice was full of sadness and pain, she was still in a crouched posture and was continuously weeping, but this time her shoulders were quivering even more.

Ye Feng still didn’t move.

“Bastard! Shameless guy! Don’t you ever let me see your face again!”

She herself tried to wander around and look for him, but apparently she wasn’t able to find any traces of him, after searching for him for next half an hour, at last, she became a little tired. By this time she saw a black packet placed next to that map, she hit opened it, and to her surprise, she found that unexpectedly there was something to eat.

Chocolates, dried beef, and some other high-calorie foods were there that could quickly add physical strength.

She was a bit hungry, hence, she opened the packet, and without any hesitation started eating them directly. Although she had gone through

such a situation, still she was not least bit afraid of the thought that this thing might have been drugged or something like before.

Ye Feng was watching everything from one side, the way she was voraciously devouring them, was appearing little funny to him, but he couldn't laugh loudly, or else he could be caught. Even if he would try to make a little movement, then based on her level of Cultivation, she could certainly easily feel his presence.

There weren't lots of food stuff, but they were still sufficient for her to satisfy her appetite completely. After finished eating, she felt a little thirsty, so she looked up and saw that there was a puddle of clear lake water.

The underground lake was not a stagnant water, rather it was connected with the outside world, therefore, not only it had maintained a quite pure and limpid water, but also there were several swimming fishes in it.

However, she shook her head, this was the centre of the entire ancient tomb, and even more, there was the central tomb chamber in the centre of this lake. Therefore, it could be assumed that the atmosphere of the water had the touch of that deceased person's presence, then how could it be considered as pure. Hence, she didn't want to drink it.

Although it was undrinkable, but it could be considered as perfect for taking a bath, there wouldn't be any problem in it.

She floated up and softly arrived at the edge of the lake, clad in a white dress, her alluring beautiful stature was resembling an image of a pretty

fairy, the tear stains on her face were complimenting her beauty, and were adding more delicacy on her face and brightening it up, also was making her incredibly more attractive than usual.

She looked at the lake, and noticed that the water was reflecting her charming and pretty appearance, her supple long beautiful hair was hanging down, and was appearing somewhat haggard.

“Hey, if you won’t show up, then I’ll die for you, look!”

Her slim stature moved and she gracefully stood at the edge of the lake, and sized up all around, while being extremely vigilant and quite ready to act momentarily.

Unfortunately, the entire periphery was empty, in addition to her voice, no other voice was there coming out from anywhere. Only the fishes, who were occasionally taking a rapid turn in the lake water, and causing little water splashes, were producing soft sound, which was quite agile and penetrating.

After waiting for a long time, she was finally convinced that there was really no one around. That scoundrel, who had taken hold of her by force, had certainly departed after finishing his business here.

“Hmmmm, to the ends of the earth, right? Lets see how far you can go.”

She groaned softly, there was clearly a touch of hatred in her expression, but also had a kind of different flavor inside. After feeling relieved, she was no longer hesitant, she thought to consider this matter

as a nightmare which had already passed. She was feeling disgusted, therefore, she wanted to take a bath and wash her body cleanly.

Her slender white hands untied the snow white long skirt wrapped around her waist, as she thought that this dress quite probably didn't seem right, how did she wear such a strange cloth?

Of course, she didn't remember that all of her clothes were taken off at that time, and this was Ye Feng who helped her by clumsily wrapping around such cloth on her body. Ye Feng was just a novice, then how could he be good at helping women in wearing clothes properly? Obviously, it was little strange for her.

Then slowly she slid down her snow-white dress, once again Ye Feng's eyes fell at that sight, her snow white, delicate, charming body, which had already hit his mind hardly, had made his heart all fiery once again.

“Damn it, isn't this seducing me?”

He thought that just in order to avoid any death at such a crucial moment, he had been holding back for quite a long time. Now, was it important for this girl to actually take a bath here openly like this!

He couldn't help but recall the moment that happened not so long ago, when the other side was with him together in a very intimate pose

No matter how badly his little friend chinned up and turned excited, but at this critical moment, he could only do just one thing, and that was complete endurance and control.

Or else, if he failed to control and jumped out, then, as per her personality and character, she would certainly not compromise, and consequently the two sides would start fighting, that was certainly going to happen with one hundred percent guarantee!

Chapter 076: Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique

When the whole body of Long Wan'er completely soaked in the cold water of the lake, she then finally felt relaxed and breathed a sigh of relief.

After taking bath cleanly, she had to leave this place, but her mind was completely focussed on the whereabouts of the Masked man

Just the mere thought of this matter, was making her heart want to commit suicide, however, she didn't intend to die before seeing that man.

She heaved a sigh of relief, while on the other side, at this moment, Ye Feng was actually diving into the abyss of suffering.

When Long Wan'er's snow white long skirt slipped down, and immediately after that she untied her pink colored cloth from around her chest, then a pair of her huge, tight and sticking out breasts dazzled in front of Ye Feng's eyes, and her white and shiny piece swayed his emotions, making him all heat up.

It goes without saying that her figure was totally of high standard, but she usually liked to wear quite loose skirts, and the reason behind it was not known. Besides, she was one of the petite body type, who couldn't be compared with those tall and huge urban women from some magazine covers.

“If she could practice Immortal Cultivation Technique “Open Hole”, then this practice could have removed impurities from her entire body, leaving behind a relatively much more beautiful skin and body, and would have made her more attractive and beautiful, but unfortunately

Ye Feng thought that, but he didn’t want to take any risk in this critical situation, by teaching her Immortal Cultivation Technique.

Moreover, Long Wan’er was one of the members of Dragon Clan of this Martial arts world. And not by any means, Ye Feng could completely trust her. If he would try teaching her this Immortal technique, and this would come in the knowledge of Dragon Clan, then who knew what would be its consequences?

Most importantly, this was his biggest secret in this world, it would never be known to others, unless it was a truly trusted person or a close relative of him.

At least for now, Long Wan’er was in a hostile relationship with him

Constantly hearing the sound of the water splash, was causing severe pain in Ye Feng’s heart feel, and his overflowing emotions were unceasingly tormenting him, for around half an hour he didn’t even open his eyes so that he couldn’t see her bathing. Wasn’t that incomparably painful to just keep watching but couldn’t do anything? Rather it would be better not to see anything.

Truly speaking, Ye Feng was such a pure guy, there was a beautiful girl

bathing in front of his eyes, but he wasn't looking at her bathing. Suddenly, a thought popped up in his mind, and he started thinking of that incident when he just arrived in this world, and got caught in a misunderstanding with Su Menghan, regarding that 'peeking while bathing thing'. This thought brought smile on his face.

In fact now, he was thinking about the school's beauty, Su Menghan, and was feeling somewhat puzzled in his heart.

“It seems like this boy's previous thoughts are still inside his mind and are probably influencing me

(Lastvoice : here 'this boy' means Ye Feng of the earth, whose body is under possession.)

He was helplessly thinking about these things.

He grew up in the World of the Immortals, and since childhood he had been seeing that the strong personalities of his world, used to follow polygamy, like they used to have three wives and four mistresses, and that was considered as quite a natural thing. Even more, women were also allowed to look for a few good men suitable for them, and what more intriguing was, it was not at all treated as something wrong and abnormal.

But this fellow, whom the current Ye Feng had taken possession of, was grown up and had accepted the modern education of this world, on the basis of that he was a huge supporter of monogamy. This belief of Ye Feng of this world was also affecting the current Ye Feng, making his heart indistinctly feel sorry for Su Menghan.

But no matter what happened, he could never leave Long Wan'er! To put it like this, she was more like his first woman, before and after his rebirth.

Moreover, Long Wan'er had the body of immortal arteries.....

Until the water splashing sound gradually stopped, Ye Feng didn't open his eyes, but after sometime he heard a rustling sound of clothes, as if Long Wan'er had finished bathing and started wearing clothes.

But after a short moment, Ye Feng heard a sound of something being torn "rips"!

His heart jumped a beat, he quickly raised his head and saw her already completely dressed, but she was appearing quite unhappy. She ripped off the tomb's map into pieces and threw them on the ground, they were all scattered on the ground as if the snowflakes were spread everywhere.

"Don't just go away like this."

Her tone made it seemed like she said that in a fit of pique, she then turned back and moved towards the lake, and looked at the clear lake water. This lake was connected with the outside world, and if she chose the underwater route to exit, then she wouldn't need any map. Probably, this thought was running in her mind, to get out of this place from the bottom of the lake!

When Ye Feng looked at her eyes, he quickly guessed that what was

going on in her mind currently, he immediately understood that this underground secret passage was far from a good option for them to exit.

Even Zhu Bainiao didn't know that where the passage of this underground lake would exactly end! In case the journey would be very long, then to hold breath for a longer period of time wouldn't be possible, in that situation what could be done?

This thought suddenly brought a panic-stricken look on his face, he thought that Long Wan'er must not be foolishly trying to die in this lake!

But before he could make any response, Long Wan'er had already taken a deep breath, and then "Plop" she jumped into the lake, and her beautiful figure vanished all of a sudden!

"You Bitch!"

Ye Feng cursed loudly, and hastily ran out from the hidden place, so as to catch up with her quickly.

But at this moment, he suddenly saw an exceptionally familiar design drawn on the wall of the ancient tomb. This sight deeply jolted his heart out from inside, and he immediately stopped his footsteps.

A pattern like a unique seven-pointed star appeared in his eyes, it looked like it had been engraved not so long before.

"Star Tomb School mark". It must be her!"

Suddenly he turned extremely ecstatic!

Once there was ‘Star Tomb School’ in the World of the Immortals, and Su Feiying together with Ye Feng belonged to this school. However, long ago this school collapsed since everyone left this school, except these two people. Therefore, starting from his childhood, Su Feiying had been teaching him how to draw the mark of the Star Tomb School.

Seven-pointed star mark was not something which could be seen everywhere, if it was not Su Feiying who might have come here and marked this, then, how could it be a coincidence?

However, currently, where was Su Feiying?

Was she still in this ancient tomb?

When somewhat anxiously Ye Feng was fully occupied with his thoughts, exactly then he suddenly felt a little sign of vibration, the ground and the walls of the tomb were shaking.

“Is it an illusion?”

Ye Feng raised up his head, and something came before his sight which thunderstruck him: “Not good, the tomb is going to collapse!”

Bang!

The sound of the monolith heavily falling to the ground, passed from the distant path leading to the tomb, simultaneously debris containing dust and soil began to fall from above Ye Feng's head, and in a blink of an eye, the entire space gradually started vibrating.

“Don't tell me that

Ye Feng hastily ran towards the underground lake, to look towards the lake bottom, and just like what he had expected!

That girl, Long Wan'er, had actually taken away the legendary luminous pearl, which was embedded in the bottom of the lake, and was swimming rapidly towards a nearby lake bottom passage.

Since that luminous Pearl was removed, so the entire ancient tomb might collapse any moment!

Zhu Bainiao knew this from beginning, but because of this reason he had not stolen that fist-sized luminous pearl, otherwise if the value of the brightness of this pearl would be compared with all of the antiques of this tomb which he had swept away, then surprisingly one must know that it was incredibly higher than collective value all of them.

However, Long Wan'er didn't have any scruples, fearlessly she took away that legendary luminous pearl from the lake's bottom. By the way, for her, it could also be used to illuminate the bottom passage of the lake ahead.

Perhaps she was thinking that after removing the pearl, if the tomb

collapsed, and if the Masked man hadn't departed yet, then it would be better for him to be crushed to death in this way. Anyway, she was going through the bottom of the lake, and probably she might not survive, but she didn't care about it.....

“Immortal Technique – Dragon Turtle Holding Breath!”

Ye Feng now couldn't afford wasting time, he quickly cast out an Immortal Technique, and took a deep breath, in a flash, a massive amount of air entered in his back, ran through his several meridians, and got stored up there in his back!

His entire back skin turned somewhat swollen, bulky and hard, just like a tortoise shell in general, not only it stored up enough air to be used while breathing underwater, but that shape could also be used to accelerate his swimming speed.

Five years of Cultivation, it was quite an appropriate stage where he could easily cast out this Immortal Technique, to store up air, which would be more than enough for him to remain underwater up to five hours.

This was the stunning effect of Immortal Technique.

Ye Feng believed that it was next to impossible for the martial arts of this world, to be so miraculous.

“Plop”, with this sound he promptly jumped into the water, since that luminous pearl was removed, so the entire space had become dark once

again, numerous boulders were continuously crashing down, the entire ancient tomb of Shang Dynasty was close to its destruction at a breakneck speed.

However, Ye Feng wasn't thinking about that, rather he quickly swam to the bottom of the lake, and saw that there was really a lake full of water passages, leading to the distant places. Long Wan'er's figure, against the light of that legendary luminous pearl, was appearing very mesmerizing. She had already gone very far, the ray of the legendary luminous pearl, through the icy-cold lake water, was appearing dim and weak.

Chapter 077: Crisis Arrives

In the icy-cold lake water, with a swollen and bulky back, Ye Feng's streamlined shape was helping him easily cut open the flow of the water to move ahead swiftly. Just like a swimming fish, he also moved through the water.

In the dim light coming from ahead, Ye Feng was getting more and more close to Long Wan'er, he could even see the pretty attractive figure of her now in this clear water, although her speed was way too inferior to his speed, but was equally flexible, and advancing rapidly.

However, the bottom of the lake had nothing but water, basically, there was no place like little ventilation, to take a breath. They were moving along the passage, which was very zigzag and circuitous, with lots of twists and turns, who knew how long it would be.

By holding her breath, Long Wan'er was swiftly advancing, it would be quite difficult even for the experts of the martial arts world, to stick holding the breath to the very end.

Just after a short swim, Ye Feng heard a sound coming from behind, like a roaring thunder. It was the sign that the entire tomb had thoroughly collapsed. On the basis of the current of water, it could be easily guessed that the entire underground lake was almost filled up by the megalith detritus now.

If Su Feiying was inside, then

Ye Feng turned a bit worried.

Although Su Feiying had a hundred years of Cultivation, and by using Immortal Thunder Technique, she could easily blast out the entire mountain. Such a mighty destruction happened just now, which had completely engulfed the entire tomb, but still it wasn't able to even harm a single strand of her hair, let alone causing any threat to her.

He was afraid of the thought that if Su Feiying would have also gone through any accident, just like him, and might have lost her Cultivation, then

(Lastvoice : here, by 'accident' author means that 'rebirth thing' which had snatched away Ye Feng's Cultivation in the beginning of this novel.)

As this thought was running in his mind, he suddenly picked up his swimming speed and moved forward more swiftly. No matter what it would take, but safely taking Long Wan'er out of this lake first, and then come back again to look for his master, these were his prime two objectives as of now.

At this point of time, suddenly the pupil of Ye Feng contracted, because he felt that a dangerous shadow was speedily approaching towards them from ahead!

A gigantic dark shadow suddenly appeared in front of Long Wan'er, and under this faint light of the luminous pearl, an incomparably vicious canine teeth peeped out. It was a fierce, strange-looking and an equally big fish like a man, which was approaching towards her head, with a lightning fast speed, with an opened mouth to nip her head!

Quite apparently, Long Wan'er had also discovered that gigantic strange-looking fish was approaching, therefore, she quickly began concentrating her inner qi in her legs, and as soon as that strange fish came close to her, her snow-white legs threw two successive kicks, which heavily kicked in its lower jaw, and threw it aside.

The situation was appearing pretty good, but then a light groaning sound passed into the ears of Ye Feng. Just like he expected, her feet would themselves suffer a severe jolt in return as an impact of those kicks.

This voice jolted his heart out, and he quickly moved forward, but unfortunately he couldn't cast out 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace' in the water, otherwise he didn't need to exhaust himself like this.

In the World of the Immortals, all kinds of vicious and voracious wild beasts were spread everywhere, some of them were formidable type, who used to feed on even those who were specialized with a hundred years of Cultivation, they were truly brutal!

Although he didn't know anything about this strange-looking fish, but he could see that its strength was quite tyrannical. If Long Wan'er would try fighting with it alone, then she would certainly end up in its stomach, all dead.

Ye Feng left her there and stopped a hundred meters away, since he couldn't go too close to her, he couldn't do anything but helplessly watch her fighting. Soon, the light of the glowing pearl began to mingle with a little bright red colored thing.

She was injured!

Her flexibility was already affected by her injuries and she was no longer agile, while on the other side, that ferocious strange fish had become increasingly fierce, it seemed by looking at its power that any moment, it would bite her into several fragments, and then would swallow her completely.

“Beast, you are asking for your death now!”

Ye Feng shouted that loudly, and quickly started swimming towards Long Wan’er. Soon, he arrived close to her at such a crucial moment, and in a matter of seconds, he started condensing Zhenqi in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, and the next moment a zhenqi condensed sharp sword flashed out in the water!

Just when that strange-looking fish was about to bite the head of Long Wan’er, exactly then an orange light flashed in the water, and divided the head of that Strange fish. Some jet-black colored blood of that strange fish proliferated in the water like the ink.

“Poisonous!”

Ye Eeng quickly shifted his gaze towards her, grabbed her around her waist, and hurriedly drag her away from that place very far. That luminous pearl, which was still there with her, was making her visible against its light, and was also highlighting several injuries of her, which were there on her arms and legs. Her soft and fragile body seemed like didn’t have any strength left.

“You.....”

The moment Long Wan'er saw the Masked man holding her, she couldn't help but wide-open her beautiful eyes, and fiercely glared at him. As she opened her mouth to say something to him, suddenly a flow of water entered her mouth, and she started coughing up, since the icy-cold lake water had almost filled her mouth and lungs.

In such a desperate situation, someone really appeared unexpectedly to save her, and on top of that, he was that Masked man, for whom she had wished, not very long ago, to be cut to pieces. Just imagine, what kind of mood she would be having rightnow!

Although she wanted to kill him at any cost, and commit suicide after that, but at present, she didn't have the strength left to get into action.

“Don't speak anything, I'll take you out.”

Ye Feng softly said that as he wrapped his arms around her already soaked soft and delicate body, and then together with her, he swiftly moved ahead in the water. All kind of fishes in several groups were swimming around them in the lake, but he never saw that kind of strange-looking fish again.

He recalled that just few minutes back, his sword, which always used to appear from his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, had unexpectedly turned orange from red? He speculated that this sword seemed to quickly revise itself according to the increasing level of his Cultivation. Might be it would be following a certain color-changing order, like from red to

orange, then yellow, then green, blue, purple, and so on, did it mean the strength of the sword was also getting more and more big?

He didn't consider how long could it be used now, anyway, enhancement in the power of the Ancient Dragon Sword was obviously a good thing for him.

Few minutes later, Long Wan'er's cheeks turned red, and it appeared like she was unable to breathe easily.

Ye Feng had already sensed her condition, hence promptly with his single-hand, he pushed his mask upwards, exposed his mouth and nose, and without thinking much, he moved close to her, as he wanted to pass air through her mouth.

A pair of her beautiful eyes widened up all at once. Like a conditioned reflex she wanted to dodge, however, she didn't have enough time to act, and suddenly she felt her soft lips had been lightly kissed by Ye Feng, simultaneously, a flow of fresh air started crossing into her mouth, letting her finally breathe slowly.

The dark bottom underwater, the dim light of the glowing pearl, frightened swimming fishes, clumps of water plants continuously swinging.

In such a surrounding, these two people, who were tightly sticking together in this icy-cold water, were elegantly moving forward.

Very warm

Subconsciously, Long Wan'er outstretched her hands, and tightly grasped him, making both sides closer to each other.

Overwhelmed, Ye Feng's heart was filled with sorrow, in case Long Wan'er knew his true identity, then what would be her reaction? It was possible that she could accept the Masked man's identity as 'Mo Jiuge', but he was afraid that it was extremely difficult for her to accept the true identity 'Ye Feng', because there was a hostile relationship between Ye Clan and Dragon Clan, even more, there was an intense and deep-seated hatred between them as well.

Although just a short period of time had passed, but it seemed like they were so close to each other for quite a long time. Finally a blue light appeared in front of them from above, and was appearing incomparably profound and tranquil in the deep water.

Was it the starlight? Or the moonlight?

No matter what the light was, it was still a good sign, since that was at least one outlet.

Whish!

Embracing the fragrant soft body of Long Wan'er, Ye Feng finally came out from the water on the surface.

"Ahem" Coughed.

Impatiently, she separated herself from his embrace, while coughing strenuously.

Ye Feng didn't care, immediately he moved ahead and started observing the four surroundings, and found out that it was a deep pool of the mountain valley. There were towering cliffs on the three sides, and there was just one side leading to the outside, which was covered with overgrown weeds and tall trees. It looked like it was inaccessible and was appearing incomparably gloomy under the dim moonlight.

“Everything's all right?”

Ye Feng lowered his head to look at her, and noticed that her whole body was drenched, a thin layer of cloth was wrapped around her body tightly, making her quite exquisite, her beautiful long hair was wet and hanging down on her creamy white skin. Such a mesmerizing scene was undoubtedly attracting Ye Feng very much!

Unfortunately, she didn't stay in his bosom very long, very quickly she struggled to separate herself from his embrace, and hastily swam to the shore of the deep pool, and took a deep breath finally.

Ye Feng went along with her ahead, since he must help her in further processing, in order to draw her father Long Mo'ran here, then only he could secure his return to the tomb, to commence his search once again. But right at this moment, suddenly his complexion changed, not good!

“Jie Jie! Actually, they are here.”

A sepulchral voice suddenly burst out from the only entrance of the mountain valley, followed by two people wearing grey clothes and straw-hat. In a flash, they came to the front of the deep pool, through the woods. They were that crazy pair of the man and the woman from Heavenly Sword Palace!

Long Waner's heart immediately sank down to the bottom of the valley.

Chapter 078: Do You Understand Immortal Technique?

Ye Feng stepped his foot on the water shore, looked up and saw two people were standing under the stars, wearing grey clothes and straw hat, which suddenly startled him. In his previous strength estimation, he had assumed that perhaps he could barely cope up with one of them, but if they teamed up against him, then he was far from their match.

Wherein, the man, with a gloomy smile, stuck out his long red tongue and licked his lips, as he looked maliciously towards the head to toe soaked Long Wan'er. Quite apparently, he was looking at her as his prey.

“So, you’re that Mo Jiuge It seems that you and Dragon Clan’s Miss Long had a great time together, how about you add me in it?”

The man’s eyes were similar to a poisonous snake in general, and was looking at Ye Feng with relish.

“Wouldn’t it be better if you and I team up, and together play with this woman, what do you think about it?”

Ye Feng groaned lightly, as he arrived and stood in front of Long Wan'er, silently blocking the line of sight of the opposite party, and then he looked at those two people who were standing around thirty metres away.

Standing beside that man, was that woman, who was looking

extremely seductive, clad in a straw hat and a grey clothes, although her attire was old-fashioned, but had a very hot body. An inch wisp of her flesh, which was peeping out occasionally, was quite tempting, like a seductively attractive woman.

“Actually, it’s pretty good.”

That man licked his lips, as his eyes flashed with a sinister look: “We four people can have an amusing game, and this game is probably going to be very interesting, however, its result is already determined

“Who are they?”

Ye Feng asked that from Long Wan’er In a whispering tone.

“The man is called Li Hua, and woman’s name is Hai Tang, together they are called “a happily married couple of swords” of the Heavenly Sword Palace honestly, we are not their opponents, let’s run away quickly!”

She said that earnestly, however, there was a touch of anxiousness in her voice.

“You can’t fly, where will you go then?”

Ye Feng looked around, the valley was encircled by precipitous mountain walls on the three sides, and the only way to exit was blocked by the other side. Unless he knew flying, or his agility was far better than the other side, otherwise, he had no other option left to escape. In a

flash, he could burst out his speed by using ‘Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’ to escape, however, it was far inferior to that man, Li Hua’s speed!

Also, he didn’t have any idea why these two guys were called such names, did Li Hua use to command Hai Tang?

“C’mon, boy, take off your pants, let me, your grandfather, make you a court eunuch, might be it would help you in a way to make a living.”

While saying that, Li Hua, with a cruel smile, slowly gripped the long tarpaulin which was wrapped behind his back. However, Ye Feng had a very clear idea that a long sword was wrapped in that long tarpaulin!

“.....”

Ye Feng remained speechless, this guy seemed to be a big pervert, moreover, wasn’t that to a great extent? Imagine, if such a beautiful woman like Long Wan’er would ever fall in his hands, then what would happen to her? Apparently, the other side was being jealous. As the other side was expecting that in this given situation, if Ye Feng were not at Long Wan’er’s side, then everything would have been so smooth.

“Try thinking a way to inform your father to come over here as soon as possible, whether by making a phone call or sending a long distance voice notes. Till then, I will help you in stopping them.”

Without looking at Long Wan’er, Ye Feng said that to her, simultaneously he started condensing Zhenqi in his hand, and the next moment, an orange-coloured, Zhenqi condensed sword emerged out

again!

His sword was three feet seven inches long, had a very simple shape, just like a galloping dragon!

Making a phone call? Long Wan'er was thinking that she had one cell phone, but just recently it was damaged after entering the water. Regarding sending a long distance voice notes, she hadn't attained that level of Cultivation yet.

When they saw an orange-coloured Zhenqi sword appeared in Ye Feng's hands, the three of them remained surprised for a moment. This was the first time Long Wan'er finally saw that where Ye Feng's sword was hidden!

“Let's go back, even if we are drowned to death, still it would be better than to die in their hands”

As Long Wan'er said that, she pulled his hand, since she wanted to go back together in the tomb.

What if they bump into other people, she was actually indifferent about it. Anyway, such a thing had happened, of course, they had to die one way or another, but before dying she wanted to drag Ye Feng with herself as a scapegoat. However, these two people Li Hua and Hai Tang were perverts, and before this situation, Long Wan'er didn't want to die! But now because of these two perverts, she was damn sure that even after her death, that man wouldn't let off her body

Therefore, she would rather return to the ancient tomb, even if it would completely collapse, and she would drown to death in the lake's bottom, or whatever, still it would be much better death than an insulted death by their hands.

“Just shut up, you have to live just the way you wanted to, just try to find the way to inform your father to come over this place!”

Ye Feng solemnly scolded her, she had such a magnificent body of immortal arteries, but had not the slightest bit of ambition left. Moreover after running into these two perverted people, she had now completely lost all hope and had given up on her life.

He raised his head, firmly gripped his Zhenqi sword while looking at that man and woman, Li Hua and Hai Tang, and then by turning back he suddenly burst out laughing: “Ha ha, Wan'er, don't worry, your father has come

What? Long Mo'ran?

The complexion of those three people suddenly changed almost at the same time, and instantly they shifted their visions towards the entrance of the mountain valley. At first glance, all they saw was just the recently destroyed vegetation, where was the shadow of any human figure?

“Not good!”

Li Hua and Hai Tang quickly responded and hastily turned back.

Shua!

Li Hua quickly grasped his long sword in his hands, and held it horizontally at the top of his head, and blocked the sudden attack made by Ye Feng's Zhenqi condensed long sword. Both of the Swords intersected with each other, under the bright shining stars.

However, unexpectedly Ye Feng's sword wasn't cut off, because this long simple-looking sword fell under the category of 'Sharp Weapon Rank'!

"Jie Jie, this young guy is really treacherous, unexpectedly launched a sneak attack on us!"

(Lastvoice -> Jie Jie is a term used by the author to show a way of cruel laughing.)

A gloomy smile crawled over Li Hua's face, although he was seemingly relaxed, but few drops of sweat could be seen on his forehead. If he had responded even by half a beat slow, then Ye Feng's sword would have beheaded him by now.

"Moron!"

From behind, when Long Wan'er saw Ye Feng had made a sneak attack, she scolded him loudly, this guy had merely five years of Cultivation, and had just a long and plain sword which was just at the weapon level rank, and with that did he intend to fight with Li Hua and Hai Tang, who were at terrific level of fifteen years of Cultivation?

Obviously, she had not the slightest bit of idea that Ye Feng's five years of Cultivation was equal to a decade of Cultivation of this world, let alone this case, the gap was still not as huge as she had imagined

“You are crazy, I can't accompany you, you stupid”

She gritted her teeth as she said that, then she turned back and directly plunged into the deep pool of water. Since this thought was crazily running in her mind, that being drowned to death would be always relatively better than to be killed by the perverted opposite party. In her opinion, Ye Feng had already entered into a complete face to face combat with the opposite party, hence, in no time he would be beheaded, and she didn't have the courage to see her man cut down into several sections, that would be such a horrifying scene

But before plunging into the deep pool, she hesitated a bit.

When she turned around and saw a heart-terrifying scene where Ye Feng was constantly trying to avoid the opposite party's sword attack, she couldn't endure it and her voice stuck in her throat.

“Speed is really fast”

After experiencing the first attack, Ye Feng was reluctantly trying to avoid opposite party's attack, his complexion had turned very calm and solemn, the instantaneous eruption speed of the opposite party was much stronger than his speed. Just now, he had barely avoided that sword which was almost about to cut off his head.

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

He suddenly put to use this technique, one after another his faint blurred image started appearing and disappearing around them, and his velocity was incredibly fast.

“Too slow.”

That seductive woman smiled, simultaneously clasped the hilt of her sword, which was wrapped in the tarpaulin hanging behind her back, and waved opened it. Immediately a sword emerged out. She then quickly waved her sword at the place where the figure of Ye Feng had just appeared, in order to cut him down. Her swift and fierce sword's edge was similar to the figure of the god of death, in common!

Although there were numerous remnant shadows, but since her Cultivation was at a higher stage, her sensation was very keen relatively. She quickly saw the place where Ye Feng's true body was, and thus, she aimed her sword there to chop him down, in a single blow.

“Hey Stop!”

Watching from the edge of the deep pool of water, Long Wan'er eyes were shining with tears. Unconsciously, she seemed a bit disturbed since she wasn't able to bring herself accept this thought that “Mo Jiuge” would be killed like this. Although her innocence was slandered by him, but think carefully, this man was not like he couldn't be accepted

Hai Tang's corners of the mouth curled up, how could she stop? But the next moment, she remained totally thunderstruck, because she was almost sure that her sword had actually hit someone in the empty place!

Immortal Technique 'Camouflage'!

Ye Feng, while being under the cast of 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace', was constantly trying to baffle the other party, simultaneously he also activated 'Camouflage', making his body fade away, like a false remnant shade. Although he was unable to run, but had already succeeded in making the opposite party totally confuse and misinterpret.

“Do you understand Immortal Technique?”

The real Ye Feng's ghost suddenly emerged out behind Hai Tang's back, and by curling up his corners of the mouth, he raised his hand. Suddenly Zhenqi heavily rushed through his long sword, and the next moment, he waved his hand.

Bright-coloured blood instantly gushed out, as his double-edged sword pierced through her heart!

Chapter 079: Heavenly Sword Tornado

After reaching five years of cultivation, now Ye Feng could use 'Camouflage' technique up to his heart content, without any time limit, in order to confuse what others' naked eyes were seeing.

This technique is considered as just a small cheap trick in the World of the Immortals, because there, once an Immortal attains ten years of Cultivation, he gets the ability to use 'Soul Search' technique. He then doesn't need to rely on his naked eyes anymore, since he already becomes able to see through the illusion easily. However, the people of the Martial arts world don't have the capability to use Immortal Technique 'Soul Search', therefore, Ye Feng used 'Camouflage' as his next move!

In the twinkling of an eye, Ye Feng's sword assassinated the glamorous beautiful woman, Hai Tang, without showing any tender affection towards her. Now, the situation had turned out like this, if he didn't kill the opposite party, then the opposite party would undoubtedly erase him.

As Hai Tang wide opened her eyes, and turned around to look even a glimpse of that person who killed her, Ye Feng immediately kicked her in the ass, and she heavily fell to the ground, as her fresh blood streamed down her body and spread all over the ground. She died with a remaining grievance, her straw hat also rolled out far away from her head.

After all, Ye Feng had killed her, and suddenly felt more relaxed now. This kind of perverted wicked person used to live in the world, even if few of them survive, then who knew, in the future, how many people would become their prey. Actually, seeing one's own man abusing and having

fun with other women, was not at all a good thing.

When that sinister man, Li Hua, saw that, the colour of his face suddenly faded away, as if he couldn't believe his own eyes that a woman, who had been accompanying him for last so many years, was now killed before his eyes.

Just now what happened? Hai Tang actually failed to distinguish between Ye Feng's real body and fake body! This kid, what type of agility did he use in the end which was so terrible?

Long Wan'er also froze on the spot.

Was that woman, Hai Tang, just now killed by Mo Jiuge's sword? Just like he previously killed Corrupt Wolf Sword and Long Xian? However, Hai Tang was different from those guys, she had a great fifteen years of powerful Cultivation. Honestly speaking, she had been ruling in the arena of martial arts for many years!

So now, was he going to pick on Li Hua next? Was he confident about it?

When she saw Ye Feng's sword flashed and killed Hai Tang, her heart immediately ignited the hope of survival, and she promptly got into action.

She was not stupid, under such a dim light of night, if Long Mo'ran would have been really searching for her in the mountains, then, in that case, she wanted to notify him very easily.

“Daddy! Daddy!

She made an effort to shout out loud twice, if he would be somewhere nearby in the woods, she believed that he would come quickly.

At the same time, she lurched forward, picked up few dry twigs and piled them up together, quickly cleaned up all around, and then by using her inner qi she ignited the wood!

“I have never imagined that he could actually be so fierce

As she was lighting up the fire, she looked at Ye Feng with a perplexed look. Wearing the mask on his face, he was appearing so mystical under the light of stars.

“He has just five years of Cultivation, even though his strike actually killed Hai Tang, no matter what means he had used, it all explains that he is gifted with an unusual talent. If he comes to our Dragon Clan as the son-in-law, then I believe that daddy will probably not refuse to accept him. However, I don’t know why he always refuses to take off his mask.....”

When she shouted a few times, the word “daddy” caused reverberation around the mountain valley, which also shook up that perverted man Li Hua, and he suddenly came back to his senses.

No, it was not the appropriate time to daze out!

In case Long Mo'ran really rushed over here, then Li Hua should consider himself as all finished. Who didn't know how ferocious this guy Long Mo'ran was? If someone dared to bully his daughter, then that meant he was tired of living!

If he would do everything secretly without leaving any evidence, then that would be fine. But if somehow Long Mo'ran would come to know about it, then perhaps, the fate of Heavenly Sword Palace would be similar to Ye Clan from twenty years ago

Seeing Long Wan'er trying to light up the fire, Li Hua's thought turned very violent, and he decided to kill her first!

“Your opponent is me.”

Ye Feng groaned coldly as he said that, at the same time he held up the sword to block in front of the opposite party. By looking at his eyes, Ye Feng quickly guessed that some evil ideas might have been cropping up in his mind.

“Do you think that you can block me?”

A ferocious expression suddenly crept over the face of Li Hua, and he heavily hit his right foot one after another on the ground, angrily. Actually, how Ye Feng's long sword had killed Hai Tang, this scene had jolted his heart out, and in anger, he clenched his hands.

A pair of swords was there in his hand!

He was extremely confident that once he burst out with his speed, then this Masked guy could never stop him. Therefore, he made a plan to first deal with Long Wan'er, then after killing her, he would throw her body into the deep pool. Afterwards, he would have plenty of time to play with this kid.

This kid dared to kill his woman Li Hua had never turned so annoyed in this last decade, like he was now.

But the moment he moved his feet, so as to dodge and quickly leap forward to kill Long Wan'er, at the same time, he suddenly felt that a flower appeared in front of his eyes, and in a split second, his mind blanked out, and he stayed standing in-situ!

“Kill!”

Ye Feng had five years of Cultivation now, which had tremendously increased his real combat capability. Hence, he used an Immortal Technique ‘Hypnosis’, making the opposite party blanked out and expressionless all of a sudden. Although it had just a little effect on the people of this martial arts world, but even if it was only for a moment, was still a rare opportunity.

His Zhenqi condensed long sword exuded an orangish-red light, carrying a swift and fierce matchless power and influence, he rushed towards Li Hua's neck and waved his hand to cut off his neck.

Shua!

However, at such a critical moment, both of the swords of Li Hua rose up. By relying on his several years of fighting experiences and intuitions, he promptly stuck out his sword and blocked Ye Feng's sword attack, which was just a few centimetres away from his neck.

The cold sweat streamed down as he recovered!

This masked boy, how could he be so strange?

Not good, he would have to get rid of him first

Li Hua's heart trembled with fear, by holding swords in his hands, he fended off Ye Feng's Zhenqi sword, in one fell swoop. He was now totally determined that the right time had arrived, to use his unique sword technique, which was considered as the commensurate skill of Heavenly Sword Palace, in order to quickly finish this Masked boy.

A terrifying killing style 'Heavenly Sword Tornado'. Since it possessed an enormous destructive power, therefore, a very few people of Heavenly Sword Palace cast out this technique. But, once someone cast out, it was rare that people could survive from its effect. Li Hua and Hai Tang together always used to rely on this move to kill their several enemies!

As his double swords united, he quickly moved forward, simultaneously started to pull out his inner qi from all around his body, which was condensed in the essential acupuncture points throughout his body, making his killing technique finally activated. In a flash, a relentless light flashed out from his sword. In addition to it, under the complimenting starlight, his face was revealing a very fierce expression, as if the devil had descended to earth!

All of a sudden, Heavenly Sword Tornado burst out, and with a lightning speed, it swept towards Ye Feng to completely engulf him!

“Oh, not good, I have to avoid its sharp edge!”

Ye Feng heart shivered with fear, he waved his long sword, and barely stopped the close attack of the opposite party's sword's light. Simultaneously, by displaying Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, he promptly retroceded.

“Die!”

With an extremely fast speed, Li Hua raised his Sword Light Tornado and pressed it close against Ye Feng. Soon, fresh blood spattered. Just in a moment, Ye Feng's whole had been covered with several wounds of all sizes. The double swords were quite sharp, which were easily peeling away his flesh such as mud!

Ye Feng clenched his teeth, as he was still stubbornly blocking Long Wan'er from Li Hua's attack. He didn't have any means to counter the moves of the opposite party. Even if he tried to confuse the opposite party by using 'Camouflage', which he just recently used to kill Hai Tang, that too wouldn't work out anymore.

Let alone this matter, currently, Ye Feng didn't dare to leave Long Wan'er alone. Since in the water, she had already been injured by a strange fish's bite, again if she came close to Li Hua, then that would be the end of her life.

Several wounds were continuously popping up all around his body, like on his chest, arms, legs, even there were two deep wounds from where his bone could be seen! However, Ye Feng still stood stubbornly facing the enemy, without even shrinking back even an inch!

“Ehh! What is this?”

At this time, Ye Feng suddenly felt that his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring was transmitting certain kind of information to his mind, which startled him for a moment.

“Die!”

Seeing that, Li Hua quickly rushed towards him to seize the opportunity. By holding a hideous look on his face, frequently licking his lips with his red tongue, he crossed his footsteps, and the tornado, which was formed by his double swords, at last enveloped him completely!

Chi Chi!

(Lastvoice : Chi Chi – a laughing sound made by Li Hua to scoff at Ye Feng)

All of a sudden, Ye Feng’s whole body was twisted into fragments by the swift and fierce light of the sword!

In the fierce looking eyes of Li Hua, the fresh blood of Ye Feng was appearing beautiful, accompanied by the starlight together with his sword light. A bright red coloured blood, all at once, spurted out in the

air, right in front of the eyes of Long Wan'er, making her heart stop beating at once!

Chapter 080: Sword Qi's Trembling Cold Light

Died?

Long Wan'er's heart started jumping wildly. Just a moment ago, she got engaged in lighting up the fire, hence she couldn't pay attention to their fight. But now, her charming face paled down, as she could see that Ye Feng could have clearly dodged it, but he insisted on standing in front of her, so it –

Between her and Li Hua, Ye Feng's fresh blood splattered, making the whole scene look like the hell on earth.

Once again, that perverted man proceeded with his Heavenly Sword Tornado. Under the faint light of the stars and moon, his reflection appeared dark and hellish in the nearby dark and silent deep pool.

However, those two people, at the same time, quickly discovered the incorrect place.

This meant that the splash of fresh blood, didn't it seem quite real? When it touched their bodies, it appeared same as mist and then it vanished lightly. Even after getting twisted by the Sword Tornado, Ye Feng's body fragmented into several pieces and also became very light.

“No it can't be, was it just his afterimage?”

The perverted man's heart suddenly shivered out, as he found out that

he had seen through his trick. However, immediately after that, he curled up his corners of the mouth, and with a hideous smile, he covetously glared at Long Wan'er.

Although it was an afterimage but accompanied by fresh blood. The true level of people could be anticipated by that, although Ye Feng nearly deceived them. But strength was strength, just relying on a small cheap trick wouldn't help in achieving victory.

“Boy, since you got away with that afterimage, so now, this beauty will certainly go with me!”

His smelly red-coloured tongue licked his lips, as he revolved his Heavenly Sword Tornado with a great velocity. And then he moved forward towards her, since he wanted to completely engulf her and then break her into fragments by twisting her!

At this moment, her pupils contracted as she saw him coming towards her. She wanted to hastily jump down in the water, but the condition of her legs was not good, as they were badly hurt. But now, she simply didn't have a way out!

During such a critical juncture, Ye Feng's stature appeared silently behind Li Hua's back, about ten metres away, and then suddenly wielded his Zhenqi sword, and a fierce ice-blue Sword qi emerged out under the light of the stars, cutting through the air at a lightning speed, and hit someone right on the mark!

Poof!

The sound of a weapon entering the flesh resounded, immediately followed by a flow of fresh blood which dispersed everywhere as the sword light passed through. In a split second, the sword light stagnated, and in the next moment, a long sword flew up and fell down in the nearby thick bushes with a “clang” sound.

“Aaaah aaah!”

All of a sudden, Li Hua’s pitiful yell resounded through the night.

When the sword light halted, Long Wan’er finally saw what just happened and remained stunned for a while. As she found out that Li Hua’s one arm had been cut off from his shoulder and blood was constantly gushing out from there and falling to the ground. The sight was extremely fearsome; apparently he was experiencing an unparalleled pain!

“How is it possible? Sword qi!”

While staggeringly, he turned back and look at Ye Feng’s mask, there was an alarmed and frightened expression on his face.

Just now, that was Sword qi, without any mistake!

In the world of Martial arts, most people could only do close combat, except two kinds of people. First, those who excelled at Hidden Weapon Technique, and second, those who could pull inner qi out. Only such people had the ability to efficiently use Sword qi, Knife qi, and so on!

Such as Long Wan'er's father, Long Mo'ran, who was the head of Dragon Clan. He was able to release a powerful Sword qi because fifty years of cultivation was not a joke.

However, there was a small number of people in the hidden martial arts world, who had this kind of talent. Who exactly was this masked man?

He didn't know that Ye Feng was different from other people since he used Zhenqi to practice. Besides, he also didn't know that Zhenqi and inner qi were totally two different things.

The reason why the inner qi is referred as "inner qi" because it's extremely difficult to pull it out, and it can only be attached to the body or a weapon to enhance its power.

But the fact was that Zhen qi was more suitable with the natural world.

The principles of these two had a fundamental difference.

Therefore, Li Hua was scared of the thought that he was facing someone, who could easily cast out such a powerful Sword qi. He was just an ordinary swordsman, having merely fifteen years of Cultivation, hence, was simply not a suitable opponent!

He didn't want to report anyone about Hai Tang's enemy. He quickly picked up his blood dripping arm, lifted up his long sword from the bushes, and at an incredibly fast speed, dashed towards the entrance of the valley and ran away.

He was really afraid that if Ye Feng would hit him once again with the Sword qi, from behind, then he wouldn't be able to dodge it.

Fortunately, Ye Feng watched him as he ran away and didn't use his Sword qi again.

In fact, Ye Feng also wanted to chase him down, to eliminate an evil like him thoroughly from the face of the earth, leaving behind a threat to oneself was not in his nature. But the problem was, at present, he had no power left either to use Sword qi or to chase him down.

The information about Beheading dragon sword first style, just a moment ago, had been transferred from the Dragon Sword ancient ring into his mind. The first style was the most basic use of Sword qi, nothing fancy, just needed the practitioner to release Sword qi channeled through the sword. And this time, it emptied out all the Zhen qi from Ye Feng's body.

“Dragon Sword heritage, even ancient ring

Ye Feng gasped, immediately his Orangish-red Zhenqi sword disappeared from his hand. His long sword couldn't exist without the continuous condensation of Zhenqi, hence, it immediately changed into the nihility.

Beheading Dragon sword first style, Ye Feng just instantly comprehended it and successfully displayed it. This could stun almost anyone. What kind of talent was this?

However, this was just a normal thing for Ye Feng.

In the World of the Immortals, why the renowned Ice Fairy, Su Feiying, had a liking for him and why did she accept him as her disciple? Only one reason was there, that was simply because – he was a genius!

In Immortal's Cultivation, the strength of the cultivator was considered most important, apart from the level of cultivation. However, the cultivator's talent also had a major role.

In the Immortal's World, some people needed to spend several days or even several months, in order to grasp some ordinary Immortal techniques like Camouflage, Hypnotism, Dragon Turtle, and so on. But in Ye Feng's case, he actually just needed a moment.

Highly talented people not only comprehended Immortal Technique quickly but also reached a profound level of understanding. When such people cast out any Immortal Technique, they displayed stronger power. While others, even if they tried their best to excel at it, still showed a horrible result.

In the Immortal's World, each of the Immortal Technique has a division of levels. Less talented people can practice only up to the first layer, but highly talented people are able to practice up to the second layer, third layer, and so on

Also, he didn't know whether the Martial arts world had this kind of parlance

Ye Feng coughed twice and was unable to stand properly. There were two visibly deep wounds on his chest and thigh which were deeply-cut and had clearly visible to the bone, from where the blood was dripping unceasingly.

Li Hua's double sword Tornado couldn't be overlooked, just in a short moment, he brought about enormous injuries. What if the battle didn't end yet, Ye Feng was not his match. But, fortunately, that perverted man was scared away since one of his arms was cut off by Ye Feng's Zhenqi sword.

“Hey, how are you now!”

Under the faint starlight, along with the chimney smoke curling up in the air, hurriedly, somewhat staggeringly, Long Wan'er ran up to him, as she was still worried about this desperate guy standing in front of her as a shield.

When she saw there were a dozen of large or small wounds on his body, as well as, two severe deep injuries on his chest and right thigh where even his bone had become somewhat visible, she suddenly felt a severe pain in her heart as if a knife had pierced through her heart.

“It's nothing, -coughs-

Ye Feng felt somewhat laughable, could it be that this young girl's heart was really captured by him?

“Just wait until Daddy comes, then, come with me to Dragon Clan.”

The young lady, Long Wan'er with a bad temper, by gathering her black-coloured eyebrows together, said that with an undeniable expression. Such injuries, so long as he went to Dragon Clan's home, then after training for a whole month, would be able to heal up thoroughly.

As per her tentative plan, as long as her father would arrive, everything would be over by then. At that time, she would bring him back to her home. With his natural talent, the father would definitely have a liking for him, right?

Just then.....

“Also, take off your mask, I won't ignore or abandon you, even if you are ugly.”

Long Wan'er stared at him as she said this in a somewhat peevish manner.

Unfortunately, regarding these two requests, Ye Feng was doomed to let her down. He could neither take off the mask nor could he go with her to her home, otherwise, only God knows what might happen then?

Chapter 081: Long Mo'ran's Green Hat

Since Ye Feng had five years of Cultivation now, he could easily use 'Camouflage Technique' to change his appearance, completely. And in case, he had to take out the mask in front of Long Wan'er, then she couldn't be able to see his real face.

But his heart didn't support his thought, he actually didn't want to show his false appearance to her, instead, he would rather prefer the image of a masked man in front of her.

Only when he would completely know the matter which had happened between Dragon Clan and Ye Clan, and would get success in resolving both parties' contradictory views, then only he could appear before her, with his true appearance!

The crucial point was that, Ye Wentian had seriously warned him once that he must not let Dragon Clan know that he used to practiceAnyway, he used to believe Ye Wentian, since that old man was his grandfather after all.

"Sleep for a while."

Through his mask, Ye Feng gazed into her beautiful eyes, and quickly cast out 'Hypnosis' on her.

Suddenly her consciousness dispirited, and her mind became relaxed. Since she hadn't kept her guard on against him, she immediately got

caught in his trick! Her beautiful eyes immediately closed, and she softly poured in his arms.

“Hiss

Ye Feng couldn't bear the pain and shouted painfully, because this young girl slumped over his chest wound, and almost gave him a painful death experience. He hastily stretched out his hand, carried her next to the point of fire, and then picked up some soft leaves, making her partly lie down above them.

Afterwards, he decided to take advantage of her, until her father would come over here, he must ask some questions before the effect of hypnosis ran out.

“Wan'er, do you know Ye Clan?”

Ye Feng asked that first.

“I know.”

She was asleep, but she replied smartly

Under the pale light of the stars, these two started playing questions and answers game. Soon Ye Feng got the picture clear about the general situation of both the Clans. Perhaps, because, this was not considered as a secret matter anymore in the Martial arts World. Moreover, Long Wan'er wasn't under any guard, hence, she spoke out everything completely.

Originally 18 years ago, one of the largest Clans of the Martial arts world was Ye Clan, with the maximum influencing power. In the Martial arts circle, Ye Wentian, who was the great martial artist of the veteran level, with great name and fame, was considered as a highly respected person throughout the secret hidden world of martial arts.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng's father Ye Yunfei, was totally a very incompetent person, who neither had any interest to learn martial arts nor had any skill, he was just known as a big playboy in the martial arts circle. Shortly after the birth of Ye Feng, he got hooked up with the wife of Long Mo'ran.

Since Long Mo'ran's wife was engaged in such an affair, it terribly stirred up his anger. Besides, in general, the actions of Ye Yunfei had already triggered the hatreds of several influencing Clans. Hence, at last, one night, a war broke out when Long Mo'ran, together with numerous influences of the martial arts world, exterminated the entire Ye Clan, in the Mt. Luofu cave, along with Ye Yunfei and his own wife, personally, by beheading them!

In that tangled warfare, numerous casualties took place. Ye Yunfei, who only got success in protecting his newly born child Ye Feng, died with a huge regret. Before dying, he looked up towards the sky and sighed deeply, since he was feeling severe guilt for his entire family's mishap.

Moreover, it was extremely difficult for Ye Wentian to fight against many influencing figures at the same time, and secondly, it was totally his son's mistakes. These two reasons forced him to restrain the thoughts of taking revenge, and lastly, he agreed with numerous public figures of the martial arts world.

So long as Ye Feng didn't practice the martial arts, the great public figures of the martial arts world wouldn't permit anyone to trouble him. Otherwise, even if Ye Wentian would try, by putting his life on the line, to support Ye Feng, still he wouldn't be able to stop them from destroying his family!

A highly respected person from the Martial arts world said such words, besides, who wouldn't dare to obey him?

The Mt. Loufu Cave was one of the ten big dwelling places for Cultivation practices, in which the practice speed was 30% faster than the outside world. When Ye Clan was eradicated, Ye Wentian, along with a newly born baby Ye Feng, left this cave and moved away, since this place was under the direct control of Dragon Clan.

Henceforth, Long Mo'ran had become eccentric and unreasonable. He started to administer this Martial arts world and always considered himself as correct. Moreover, since Long Wan'er's childhood, he had been harshly dealing with her.

She grew up learning all kinds of cultural talents and skills, and kept pace with the times. When she turned fifteen, her standard became equivalent to the standard of various branch masters of the outside world. Then the time arrived when she finally established a connection with her meridians, to open up her Dantian, and finally started practicing Dragon Clan's old Cultivation techniques. She had three years of Cultivation at the age of eighteen, then after she went outside to learn and practice through real experiences. Currently, she barely turned twenty, and already had promoted her Cultivation to 10 years, just through her 3 years of real life experience. Now she had become the extra

ordinarily talented person in the younger generation of her Clan!

For the people of this world, during one's childhood, meridians used to be very frail, accompanied with a turbid Dantian. Therefore, normally, some people didn't use to practice the martial arts in their childhood. 16 years of age was considered as the most appropriate age of this.

The achievement of Long Wan'er, created a new style in the martial arts field, making Long Xian, Luo Li and other people of her age, far inferior to her.

“It can be assumed that her talent ‘the body with immortal arteries’ will certainly not be wasted. Since she looks for natural treasures to quickly lift up her Cultivation, which explains everything that this young girl is not at all stupid.”

Ye Feng recalled the time when he first saw her, and thought she cherished that three gold leaf grass. She even risked her life just in order to snatch away that grass, from the clutch of that crazy couple of Heavenly Sword Palace. Such kind of strength she had, coupled with the status of being the daughter of Long Clan's first wife, how couldn't she have such name and fame in the world?

He somewhat sighed with emotions, he had never thought that such a huge enmity was there between Ye Clan and Dragon Clan from quite a while. While their children were actually hanging around together like this.....

He wanted to ask some more questions, like how was her mother now, and so on. But suddenly he heard the sound of some messy footsteps

coming from the valley's entrance. He already knew that it was Long Mo'ran along with his people.

“I can only say that we will carry on this discussion again next time.”

While he was thinking about this, he looked at her, then lowered his head, pressed his lips against her cheeks softly and gave a lovable kiss, and then with a smile, he quickly cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and plunged into the water, carrying that luminous pearl, and finally sank.

He couldn't meet Long Mo'ran now, moreover, he must go back to look for the traces of Su Feiying.

And Long Wan'er, he would later say goodbye to her!

.....

When the sun raised from the east side, a grey and black coloured Land Rover was smoothly running between the mountains, gradually approaching Linjiang City, as well as, several other SUV were following it from behind.

In the car's passenger seat, Long Mo'ran was there wearing a light coloured long and dull looking gown. Although he was looking very calm, but in fact, he was actually burning with anger.

While on the other side, Long Wan'er was lying on the back seat of the car, under her sister-in-law's care. If this news that last night, Long

Mo'ran let his pride, her daughter, taken away by a man, and there her virginity was stained, then this could totally ruin the honour and reputation of the great Dragon Clan.

When he arrived with his people at the spot, chasing the smoke rising from the valley, and took a closer look at the scene, then he noticed that Hai Tang from 'Happily married pair of swords' had been killed by a sword, while Long Wan'er was sleeping by the fire, wearing a very quiet and peaceful expression on her face.

“That masked man, Mo Jiuge, have really got a huge courage.”

Long Mo'ran's eyes flashed with coldness, he clearly knew that it was certainly that Masked man who was involved in all these affairs.

Although he didn't know a lot about him, but he knew that he had a sword. The corrupt Wolf Sword, Hai Tang, as well as Long Xian, whose corpse was just discovered at the foot of the hill, all these three were killed by the sword.

Long Xian was the son of Long Mo'ran's brother, who was very ignorant and incompetent guy. That was why whenever Long Mo'ran's eyes fell on him, he always used to remind him of Ye Yunfei. Therefore, his death didn't cause much impact on Long Wan'er, however, his daughter was actually tarnished by that guy, did he really manage to torture Long Clan like this?

He ordered to block off the flow of news, so that this matter didn't get spread everywhere. But in his heart, he also knew that how long he would be able to keep this matter in dark from outside world. Since, not

only that Masked man was not caught, but that abnormal man, Li Hua from 'happily married pair of swords' disappeared as well, these might be the insider

“Wan’er, did you wake up?”

From the car’s rear seat, a voice of a female came out which was as gentle as water. It was Long Wan’er’s sister-in-law, with a very lucid and attractive facial structure. She saw her with deep concern and asked that.

“I’m here..... What about him?”

As soon as Long Wan’er woke up, she quickly sat up, and anxiously looked around in all directions.

“Who?”

Her sister-in-law asked one.

“Mo Jiuge, he

Long Wan’er remembered everything and turned a bit anxious. Though, she tried hard to place her point in front of her father, but was interrupted by him in between.

“No matter who that guy is, I won’t let him go.”

Long Mo'ran lightly said: "As for you, go back and give me a good reflection, also, you are prohibited to go out anywhere, throughout this year."

"What? It's not right, he -"

Long Wan'er hurriedly opposed his father.

"Shut up."

There was a furious look on his face.

She noticed that her father was thinking something, and stared him for a while.

Mo Jiuge was somehow related with Ye Feng, whereas because of Ye Feng's father, Long Mo'ran had to wear a green hat. As far as Ye Feng was concerned, Long Mo'ran could already have killed him easily, but due to the agreement, he wasn't able to touch him. Now, that Masked man and Ye Feng had some connections with each other, so wasn't it like they brought about their own destruction?

(Lastvoice : In China "wearing a green hat" is an expression that Chinese use, when a woman cheats on her husband or boyfriend.)

What to do?

Where is he now?

He must not get caught by Daddy

She had a feeling now, that whatever she would say, that would never change the decision of her father, hence the only thing she could do was prayer. She silently prayed in her heart for his safety. Earlier, she had wished to make him Dragon Clan's son-in-law, now it seemed like she wished for something impossible.

In such case, she could only

Chapter 082: Vicious Punks

Time rolled on, and two weeks quickly passed, later.

Wearing tattered clothes, a young guy, descending the Changbai Mountains, arrived at the foot of the hill's village. Two scars on that juvenile's chest and thigh could be clearly seen, which was quite alarming, like they had been caused by the sword's strike.

That juvenile was none other than Ye Feng! Some time ago, he had thrown away his mask and restored his original appearance.

During these days, he carefully searched out thoroughly the already collapsed ancient tomb, however, totally failed to find any trace of Su Feiying. Carrying a glowing pearl and also a complete Lingshi, which he happened to find by chance, he descended the hill, all prepared to make Scar come to pick him up.

Although his mood was lost, but he kept on searching all around for so many days, still didn't find any relevant information. Therefore, to still continue staying in the ruins, didn't make any sense.

Afterwards, he arrived at the village which was not big, however, surprisingly there was a cemented road actually leading to the outside world. Although it was not wide, but Scar's vehicle that Hummer could still be able to pass through it. Besides this, it was impossible for him to return to Linjiang City in these tattered clothes, after all, he was looking very suspicious in this appearance. He was just trying to somehow borrow a cell phone from someone, in this village, so that he could give a

call to Scar, to come over here with a pair of new clothes, to pick him up.

Before entering this village, he carefully observed it for a moment, and when he didn't find any suspicious person or thing in the village, then he slightly felt relaxed, and finally set his foot in the village.

The moment he entered the village, he saw two aunts weirdly watching him dressed like this. They immediately pointed at him and started whispering with each other while returning home, and then they closed their door. Since, at present, he was looking more like a person from the underworld, who had been chopped down by someone, so it was quite natural for people to get scared of him.

He walked into the village, and went towards a row of four careless and casual youth. They were somewhat strangely staring at Ye Feng's bulging chest.

“Boy, what's hidden in your clothes?”

Inside his clothes, around his chest area, he had kept that fist-sized glowing pearl as well as the complete Lingshi, which were extremely priceless.

Seeing the other party questioning him, he said lightly : “Lend me a cell phone, I have to use it just for a moment. And, regarding what I have brought, it surely has nothing to do with you, right?”

“Fuck, so arrogant? Come to think of it, isn't it great that his body has two severely cut scars?”

Those four young people booed together rhythmically, as if they were seeing Ye Feng as an idiot.

They were the gang members of Baoshan Town which was near the village, who used to loiter around all day. Occasionally they used to collect huge protection fees from nearby villages. They were quite famous, and were called as Baoshan's four handsome youth. They used to fight very cruelly, that was why they were also recognized and very much appreciated by the boss of their gang.

Today, they had come to this village to stroll, and then they started sexually harassing an unmarried girl from any random family. Seeing Ye Feng passing through, suddenly stirred up their interest. Obviously, such a dubious character would naturally attract them, and they could never easily let him off.

“Brat, come on, hand over that thing. Otherwise, if we begin personally, then you will certainly start crying and calling out your parents for help, just like a baby.”

One among them was a guy with blond hair, with a single earring, although was not the mainstream youth, but arrogantly he stretched out his finger and pointed at Ye Feng's nose, and scolded him awfully.

“Huang Zi, don't get involved in idle talks with him, some people are a lowly type, just give him a beating once, and see he will quickly become obedient and agree to what we say.”

Gao Shou, another youth with a pair of small eyes, said that as he

pulled up his sleeves and prepared to begin dealing with Ye Feng : “Ain’t you going to still hand over that thing?”

This was clearly a defiant act, an open robbery in a blatant way.

Ye Feng’s expression gradually turned cold.

Since, he actually failed to find any information related to Su Feiying, so he was already in quite a foul mood, on top of that, now these guys were giving an order to him and trying to make him dance at their fingertips, wasn’t that quite an oppressively inadequate behaviour? He conveniently pulled out both the things, the glowing pearl as well as that complete Lingshi, and then coldly said : “Here, see it till your heart content. Now, tell me, do you have a cell phone?”

“These are so round, what are these things?”

When they saw those things, they remained surprised for a while and also felt a bit puzzled, and then they started whispering together with each other.

“Probably, it’s the legendary luminous pearl, I have seen it on the television!”

“Fuck, such a big legendary luminous pearl, then could it be sold at higher price?”

“No wonder this boy was hewn like this, actually, the body has such an expensive treasure

The eyes of those four guys were shining brightly at the moment, as they were looking towards Ye Feng maliciously. Obviously, they had regarded him as a big fat sheep! This boy, who was in such a shabby cloth, also chopped down twice by the sword, and was carrying two priceless treasures, was making them feel too jealous of him simply!

Lastvoice : fat sheet – it means a source of earning quick money.)

If he used that technique, he would eliminate

Ye Feng immediately saw through their thoughts, and snorted coldly. He was too lazy to talk nonsense, hence, he immediately took a little step, and promptly released a Bagua boxing shot!

He didn't need to exert his full strength while dealing with these guys. These guys didn't even get the time to respond, and in a flash, his punch already knocked them to the ground, one after another. They were lying on the ground, upside down, and were shouting out loud in pain.

From the distant place, some people of the village noticed that these four youth were hit by someone, one after another, which really astonished them, but they suddenly felt carefree about this incident.

These four punks used to depend on Baoshan to threaten and bluff people daily. Even more than that, they also used to deceive the innocent village girls, and then by luring these girls, they used to drag them into the dirty business. Because of these punks, every day a girl was dropped out from the school. Because of these four guys bad influence, girls unknowingly took a wrong step in their life, and finally, they used to

become a professional trollop.

But they had some worries, since the youth, in the ragged clothes, had hit these four fellows, and offended the Baoshan gang, which might not have any good end!

“Lend me a cell phone.”

Ye Feng went straight towards that non-mainstream guy with blond hair, and said that coldly.

“Lend you, lend

A panic-stricken expression suddenly appeared on the face of that blond hair guy, as if he hadn't ever expected that this fellow could hit like this. He then slipped his hand in his bosom, seemingly acted like he was pulling out a cell phone.

But then, his facial expression suddenly turned quite ferocious :
“Alright, I will give you paralysis, just go to hell!”

Holding a fruit knife, he jumped towards Ye Feng and waved his hand, in order to pierce it through his chest!

Bang!

By wielding his single-hand, Ye Feng promptly slapped his palm, making that fruit knife fly. In an instant, his complexion became colder.

Such an evil and cruel hoodlum was he, if Ye Feng would let him off, then wouldn't it be too good for him?

Hence, Ye Feng lifted his foot, heavily stepped on the back of the hand of that Blond hair guy, and by releasing his Zhenqi, he directly trampled his bone into several segments.

All of a sudden, a blood-curdling screech of Blond hair guy penetrated through the whole village!

Ye Feng's positive and upright mood had turned gloomy now, since the opposite party was constantly trying to stir up trouble for him.

“Yes, Nagang Village, there is a kid with jewellery and precious stone, and he can also fight well

At this time, the youth, Gao shou shifted his eyes towards one side, pulled out a cell phone, and said something about the current situation, to the other end. It appeared like the other side was a call helper, whom Gao shou had informed everything, and asked for the help.

“Lend me your cell phone.”

Ye Feng walked up to him, grabbed the phone from his hands, and looked at the active call Contact: Elder brother Tianbao. Apparently, that Elder brother Tianbao was the boss of these punks' gang.

Ye Feng didn't give a damn to it, he decided to rather hand over this matter to Heavenly Serpent Gang of Yanjing, so that they could have

their jurisdiction over here. Then, wouldn't they be able to pay attention to such a small gang like this, established in such a faraway town?

He hung up the phone, and then by dint of memory, he dialled the number of Scar : “Scar, Ye Feng this side, come over to Baoshan Town of Nagang Village, to pick me up.”

When Scar heard the voice of Ye Feng, he became extremely happy, however, suddenly he calmed down, and with a dignified tone, said: “Ye elder brother, Yanjing had an accident! We must hurry back

“What's the matter?”

Ye Feng frowned.

“Song Hu, that guy betrayed us!”

Scar said bitterly.

As soon as Ye Feng heard that, his look became dignified.

Song Hu, wasn't he that squared face man, to whom Scar handed over the complete management of Heavenly Sword Gang, at the time when they were leaving Yanjing? Ye Feng still remembered that this guy had a nephew, that youth in western-style clothing, whom he had met on the train, and had also beaten him. But still he was not quite convinced about this news.

Not good!

Ye Feng complexion suddenly changed, as the matter stood, could it be said that currently Su Menghan was in danger?

Chapter 083: First From The Bottom

Ye Feng knew very clearly that since Song Hu dared to betray them, that meant there must be someone supporting him from backstage. After all, the opposite party had clearly seen that Ye Feng had some kind of relationship with Old man Lin.

Song Hu had such an influencing force supporting him, that he even considered himself at the same level with Yanjing 's Lin Clan!

Lin Clan was known as the first powerful family of Yanjing, but in fact, they couldn't hoodwink people. There were several other influencing forces as well, which used to maintain the balance. Take the case of Miao Zhenqiang, the head of Public Security Bureau, his clan was similarly one of the top four respected Clans of Yanjing. However, Lin Clan was a bit on the higher side in terms of strength, if compared with another three Clans.

Ye Feng could make a conjecture that behind various respected clans, there had always been the shadow of someone from the Martial arts world. For example, Miao Clan was backed by Dragon Clan, Lin Clan had a connection with Ye Clan. Although at present, there was only one person left in Ye Clan and that was the old gentleman, Ye Wentian. Hence, most likely Lin Clan might be having some other supporters as well from the Martial arts world, since he couldn't rely on just one person.

In the game of the common world, these Martial Artists can easily earn wealth for themselves. And to achieve that, they must establish a friendly relationship with the top influences of this common world, as per their

needs. Like behind Mr Lin, there always uses to be a mystical person to protect him, perhaps that shadow wouldn't ever let even the sniper's rifle cause any threat to Mr. Lin.

“Ye elder brother, if we don't hurry back, then I am afraid Ms Ye will be caught in any danger.”

Scar hesitated for a moment, but then reminded him: “Song Hu has a nephew, named Song Tianying. He had a conflict with you and Ms Ye on the train, remember? Perhaps she would be

“What's the situation now?”

Ye Feng asked.

“My confidant has placed few people around Ms. Ye to protect her temporarily. However, Sung Hu have collaborated with Black Dragon Association, I fear that my people can't hold up against them for long.”

Scar explained.

Ye Feng felt a little-relieved hearing that: “That's good, by the way, buy a set of a new suit for me, while coming to pick me up from this place called Nagang Village of Baoshan Town. The sooner, the better.”

At this moment, Ye Feng finally decided in the heart, that perhaps couldn't he consider Scar as his future primary assistant, and could develop his skills by teaching him Cultivation?

The performance of Scar had truly satisfied him, he had always been good at his assigned work. Moreover, in these last so many years, he had created a good background of Heavenly Serpent Gang, which could never be considered as running on a small scale, with limited extent. Moreover, he also had earned numerous trusted friends in this field.

No matter what Ye Feng would plan to do in the future, like whether he would try to look for Su Feiying in the entire world, or he would like to protect the loved ones around him, he would certainly need his own power. Relying on others was not the right path after all.

After hanging up the phone, Ye Feng hit the other number to call Su Menghan.

Before walking into the mountain, his cell phone didn't have the signal, afterwards, because of repeatedly diving, he had already destroyed his phone long ago. Until now, he really didn't get any chance to contact with Su Menghan.

As for looking for Su Feiying thing, it came to an end for the time being.

In addition to that Seven-pointed star pattern, he couldn't find out any other clues related to Su Feiying in these last two weeks, as if her shadow stayed in the tomb just for a short while, and then she left the place without leaving any trace.

Soon, Su Menghan's phone got connected.

“Hello?”

A sweet and gentle female voice, just like his memory, softly passed through the phone, and made Ye Feng feel really relieved.

“Menghan, never mind, where are you now?”

Ye Feng asked.

“Today is the weekend, so I am home Right, just a moment ago, several people of Heavenly Serpent Gang came outside the villa and surrounded it, so, what have brought them here?”

Su Menghan had some doubts.

“They are around the villa just to protect you.”

Ye Feng explained that and then said : “By the way, I’ll be home tonight. Do remember, before I get back home, must not leave the villa, understand?”

“What’s wrong? Is there any danger?”

Su Menghan was a little surprised, but wasn’t too concerned about it, since her thoughts drifted towards Ye Feng promptly : “Where are you now? Will you really be back tonight? You really didn’t at all study during the last exams, did you? Since you have got the first position, from

the bottom, in the whole class.....

Ye Feng was dumbfounded by hearing that, was this the appropriate time to talk about such irrelevant things, and on top of that, about the mock test?

However, as per his result, he got the first rank from the bottom, in the class. He had really set the historical new low

“Keke, don’t worry, I will definitely get serious before the college entrance examination, believe me.”

Ye Feng said a few words, and then again he started urging so that she must not leave the villa at all cost! In case she ran into any dangerous situation, then she must run away towards the other rooms of the villa. Probably, he should also ask Ye Wentian to come out and help her, but it seemed that the situation wouldn’t turn out as dangerous as he anticipated.

After urging repeatedly, Ye Feng finally hung up the phone.

Listening to the painful screech of those four punks, Ye Feng felt even more annoyed. Therefore, to stop them from making noise, he kicked them one after another and sent them to the world of unconscious. Under this bright daylight, in the open, in front of lots of people, he couldn’t go on killing people, moreover, there was no need to kill them, that would be very troublesome.

Unlike the barren mountains and wild hills, where Li Jun, Luo Li, Luo

Lei, and Long Xian were slaughtered, and that too by that Masked man, Mo Jiuge. This place was not barren like that. Moreover, there was not even a single percent chance that Ye Feng had any relationship with the so-called Mo Jiuge.

While he stood by the roadside, waiting for Scar, letting those four punks lying on the ground in a deep slumber, soon, a medium-sized van, from the village's cemented road, approached towards that place.

As soon as Ye Feng saw that, he quickly understood that someone came from the nearby town Baoshan, so as to help those four punks in taking revenge.

Suddenly, a touch of sneer appeared on Ye Feng's face, and before other people could get off the van and come to the place where he was standing, he promptly moved towards them, leaving behind several blurred afterimages, suddenly stood beside the van.

In the passenger seat, there was a paunchy fat guy, with oily hair and carrying a too outdated hairstyle of the 80s, dressed in a neat suit, wearing a pair of silver-rimmed glasses. All these features were collectively giving him the aura of being quite a rich and classic man from old society.

Seeing the figure of Ye Feng suddenly appeared at the edge of the door, the paunchy fat man thought his eyes dazzled, hence he rubbed his eyes.

“Come out quickly.”

Ye Feng was not the least bit interested in starting any idle talk, hence, he directly pulled opened the vehicle's door, and dragged that weird hairstyle fat man out of his seat: "Are you the brother of those four bludgers? That elder brother Baoshan?"

"Yes, I, I am"

The ferocity of Ye Feng had already frightened the hell out of him.

It seemed like they were a gang of a small town, with just hundred people in their group. Might be they were involved in only one business, and that was merely collecting the protection fees. Like those four bludgers, this gang might have been robbing people by using fruit knife, murdering was just out of the question for them. In addition, it wasn't the fault of those four punks, since that fist-sized legendary luminous pearl was undoubtedly very attractive, which could allure anyone, and in return, anyone would try to take hold of it, like those four punks did.

By judging Elder brother Baoshan on the basis of his appearance, it seemed like he was a pampered fat person, holding very high and respected position. How could he be placed on a par with an extremely dedicated and hard working guy, Scar, who was also the boss of a reactionary gang, with extraordinary courage and potential?

"Honestly, don't try to mess with me."

Ye Feng directly warned him : "if you don't want to die, then do me a favour and stay well-behaved for a while."

Just after warning him, Ye Feng suddenly grabbed him by his collar. Although he struggled hard, but didn't succeed in breaking himself free from his clutch, and then his big broad face turned red. Soon, several youths got out of the van, but they didn't dare to act rashly after seeing this situation.

When Ye Feng looked at these people, he secretly laughed in his heart, and thought that really by no means, these guys could be compared with the elite class people of Heavenly Serpent Gang, these guys were still only the bludgers.

Let just one gold medallist goon of Heavenly Serpent Gang come over here, he could easily knock down four or five of them, or even more, just in a tweak.

By now, several youths had already surrounded him, and their eyes were covetously looking at him. They were constantly threatening him to let the fat person go, simultaneously looking for the opportunity to save him.

What a pity, was Ye Feng that kind of person who could show his opponent even the slightest flaw?

He sneered at them while controlling the fat person. He was looking very calm and carefree, as if he took hold of that fat man, as an under duress hostage to protect himself, but in fact, he was disinclined to begin any fight with them.

This scene made the villagers, who were constantly looking at them from afar, totally startled. They were mutually thinking that this youth

was really very fierce, how easily he grabbed the collar of the elder brother Baoshan of Baoshan Gang, wasn't he even a little bit scared of him?

As when the scene had arrived at a stalemate position, just during that period, Scar with his Hummer H2, finally rushed over to the place, with a high speed, along with a huge threatening force and influence!

Chapter 084: Long Wan'er Ran Away

When the Hummer H2 rushed over there in a threatening manner, the people present on the field remained startled and frightened.

For this type of small reactionary gang like 'Baoshan Gang' of Baoshan district, just a few vans would be more than enough to carry on its business, could they ever own such an expensive and high ranking private car like Hummer? The idea of Scar was perfect, to use Hummer H2 on a trip like this. This way they didn't need to touch or beat many people in order to deter them, they could easily avoid numerous troubles in a tweak.

As Scar stepped down from the driver's seat, he noticed that a group of people were watching him. They were surprised and were thinking in his heart that either 'Scar' was this man's name, or 'Scar' was that scar on his face!

However, immediately the whole situation terrified them to the extent where they could even wet their pants.

They saw that in the front passenger seat, a handsome lovable youth, with delicate features, leisurely playing with the pistol, was occasionally looking at those guys. There was a deadly aura around him, as if just one unsuited word from their side, and he would immediately open fire on them, without any mercy.

"I am wrong, elder brother, I am wrong!"

Some of them became so frightened that they immediately started trembling with fear, and wanted to run away. But nothing could be done, since the fingers of Zhao Yibei were on the gun, pointing at them, anyone could be scared of him, then why wouldn't these bludgers be scared of?

Damn, this was the so-called genuine underworld! To open fire brutally, without blinking an eye just because someone tried to chop down a person by his knife and rob his things! How could they even dare to trigger the anger of such a powerful presence?

Zhao Yibei would definitely not open fire to kill them. Even if he was not scared of troubles, but still he was disinclined to waste his bullets like this.

Seeing his men finally here, Ye Feng threw the fat man on the roadside, and boarded on the car with Scar. Afterwards, he promptly threw off his tattered clothes and put on a western-style suit. Although, it was the first time for Ye Feng wearing a western-style suit, but as per the words of Scar, all of a sudden, he appeared more graceful dressed in that suit.

“He he he, Elder brother Ye, if you return home like this, then I guarantee, you certainly will brighten up the eyes of Ms. Ye.”

Zhao Yibei said that with a smiling face.

“Damn you, just focus on driving, hurry up.”

Ye Feng showed a faint smile, and beckoned with the hand.

Previously, during the beginning phase of this journey, Ye Feng had already known the true identity of Zhao Yibei. Scar had a wife a decade ago, and Zhao Yibei was his wife's younger brother, who was still young at that time.

But ten years ago, that night, during that unscrupulous murder done by that swordsman, his wife had also fallen in the pool of blood, and couldn't stand again. However, since childhood, Zhao Yibei grew up with Scar, and after graduating from the junior middle school, he never studied further.

Regarding Zhao Yibei, Scar was very considerate for him and used to blindly trust him. Therefore, he especially assigned him as the driver of Ye Feng, with the hope that if he would maintain a good relationship with Ye Feng, then he could have a better career development in the future.

In the eyes of Ye Feng, he was a very lively and cheerful young man, with a network of some young individuals, which were almost similar to his age.

Hummer H2 then picked up the speed, and rushed ahead roaring, along with the cemented road of that village, and quickly drove out of it, leaving behind a group of Baoshan Gang's youths, who were still staring blankly.

That weird hairstyle, paunchy fat man, made an effort to wipe out the cold sweat dripping from his forehead, while looking at the back of Hummer. Finally, his heart heaved a sigh of relief.

He strenuously crawled on the ground to get up, then turned his head to look at those four unconscious youths, who were still lying on the ground. Suddenly his heart developed a feeling of hatred for them. Shit! Couldn't they see who the opposite party was, before stirring up trouble?

Being grabbed by Ye Feng by his collar, was making him unceasingly unhappy. Starting from this moment, his heart gradually gave birth to a sense of dissatisfaction, he no longer wanted to get down, he must walk towards the high place!

As he looked at Hummer, going far away, bit by bit, from his sight, his eyes suddenly got attracted towards its number plate, which had the license of the capital city Yanjing. Immediately then he decided to set his foot in Yanjing as soon as possible!

.....

This off-road vehicle really had all the benefits which the vehicles of this class should provide.

All the way back from Nangang village to Linjiang, if this journey had been covered by an ordinary car, then the degree of discomfort, because of several jerks and jolts, caused to the people sitting inside the car, could have given them a terrible experience, and definitely would have made them want to die. Fortunately, for Ye Feng , it was Hummer which they brought to pick him up, a really fairly comfortable vehicle!

While passing through Linjiang city, Ye Feng suddenly recalled the young girl, who was compelled by that young handsome man of Dragon Clan, to jump off the building, so he inquired about it from Scar.

As expected, because of the power and influence of Dragon Clan, nobody really cared about such a “trivial” matter. At that time, Long Xian was caught and threw inside the prison, but just a few minutes later, he was set free. However, the friends of that girl’s boyfriend came to the scene and gave a little thrashing to him, and then swaggered away.

This thing’s sudden repercussion was not small, but the media from all sectors didn’t at all highlight it, rather everyone tried their best to keep this news in dark. Even more, it was also pressed down in the local public opinion, obviously, this was the overbearing effect of Dragon Clan.

“It seems like that young man really deserves to die.”

Ye Feng recalled the scene, back from Changbai Mountains, and thought that the secret passage did not have to be really correct at that time leniently.

When Hummer finally left Linjiang city, this trip to Changbai Mountains was finally considered as over for Ye Feng. He turned his head and looked around, since he was a bit concerned about Long Wan’er. Two weeks had already passed, but still he didn’t have any updates on her, how would be she now?

Come to think of it, this young girl’s father had actually killed the father of this world’s Ye Feng. Anyways, Ye Feng must not talk anything about Long Clan, if Ye Wentian would come to know anything about his relationship with Ms. Dragon, then he would certainly make his life very difficult.

Ye Feng shook his head, and decided not to think about it anymore. He just had to wait for the right time, when his strength would hit a noticeably high level, at that time who could dare to stop him?

With a high-speed, Hummer was running on the road, when in the afternoon, around 3:00 pm, it arrived at a crossroad, which was about 30 km away from Yanjing City.

After reaching there, the complexion of both the men, Scar as well as Zhao Yibei, suddenly turned dignified, as they noticed that there was a checkpoint set up at the crossroad, and lots of policemen were assigned for inspection. Logically speaking, this matter was very ordinary, nothing was so surprising about it, but the key question was, Miao Zhenjiang, the Chief of Yanjing Public Security Bureau, was actually physically present there!

This explained that the situation was really serious.

Seeing this middle-aged man, in the police uniform, with several badges, all of a sudden Ye Feng thought of that previous incident, which happened in Jingchen restaurant, where this guy was also present, with a swagger look and with a large group of criminal police.

Miao Zhenjiang had some relationship with Dragon Clan. Although Long Wan'er had also the right to give him commands, but it was quite obvious, he was actually more willing to listen to the orders given by Long Mo'ran.

So, this guy was still in a hostile relationship with Ye Feng.

As Hummer approached the checkpoint, and was naturally stopped there, then Miao Zhenjiang's eyes got attracted towards these three men sitting in the car, and suddenly a look of "finally came" appeared in his eyes. He waved his hand, and a huge number of Criminal police suddenly rushed over there.

.....

And when Ye Feng, along with the other two men, was stopped at the crossroad, at the same time, they noticed that from quite a very distant place, like a few miles away, a man, burning with rage ,was gradually approaching towards them, from one of the top ten Caves – Wangwu cave.

In today's world of the martial arts, Dragon Clan's strength was considered as second to none, and Wangwu cave, which was hidden outside this world, was one of the top ten dwelling caves, which had been occupied by Dragon Clan. Various spiritual influences used to gather up there in this cave. Moreover, the people of the Dragon Clan used to reap huge benefits through practicing here.

Today, Long Mo'ran was burning with rage, because of his daughter. Long wan'er, whom he wanted to lock inside the house, as a confinement, for a whole one year, had actually quietly slipped down the hill and ran away!

As for where she had planned to go, was that also needed to answer?

Obviously, she was going to Yanjing, in order to try to look for that Masked man!

“Long Zi, Long Qing, quickly go and take hold of that ruthless girl and bring her back to me, if she refuses to come back, don’t think I would ever recognize her as my daughter!”

Long Mo’ran ordered that in a threatening tone.

“Yes, head of the Clan.”

There were two calm temperament men of Dragon Clan, standing in front of him and taking his orders. They were seemingly around 27-28 years old, and the aura around them was making it clear that they were absolutely stronger than Li Hua and Hai Tang of Heavenly Sword Palace!

Looking at those two men turning around and depart, still wasn’t enough to eliminate the cold wrath of Long Mo’ran, rather he was still thinking something in his heart : “Ye Feng, finally you came back from Changbai Mountains. I must examine carefully that whether you have any connection with the Masked man or.....”

He had already arranged an informer in Linjiang, when the Hummer drove out of Linjiang city, the message had been passed over to him. Apart from seizing Long Wan’er, both men Long Zi and Long Qing were also assigned to carry out an investigation plan, to find out the connection between Ye Feng and that masked man.

Regarding Long Mo’ran, he had some other important affairs to take care of.

There was a rumour spread all over the country, that recently a Fairy emerged out of the East China Sea as a mysterious woman, who was incredibly beautiful, and her temperament was like to have a complete victory over all the mortal women!

Since Long Mo'ran personally beheaded his wife, so he didn't remarry in these last two decades. It was not because he was incompetent and foolish, but because he felt that there was no woman in this world, who could be worthy of him.

However, if that fairy, who appeared in the East China Sea, was really as beautiful as the rumour claimed, then perhaps he could remarry

Chapter 085: Zhao Yibei's Death

Piercing through the air, with an extremely fast speed, when Ye Feng's Hummer H2 arrived at the crossroad, it was stopped there.

By looking at the facial expression of Miao Zhenqiang, it seemed like he was waiting especially for them to show up. Seeing that made everything clear to Ye Feng, and all of a sudden his heart understood everything. He guessed that when they had left Linjiang city, at that time they might have been watched by someone, who later on reported this to Long Clan.

(Lastvoice : Dragon Clan and Long Clan both are same, hence from today onwards I'll be using Long Clan to smoothen things.)

Long Mo'ran was not a stupid man, it was quite easy for him to guess that Masked man and Dragon Wan'er must have done something. So, he set up a checkpoint specifically for this purpose. Obviously, this inspection was not at all strange.

“Get off!”

By holding a stern expression, Miao Zhenqiang said that as he waved his hand: “You are suspected that you are concerned with several consecutive murders , so please coordinate in this investigation!”

When Scar and Zhao Yibei heard that, they immediately looked towards Ye Feng, as if they wanted to let him make a suitable decision.

“Get off the car.”

Ye Feng’s facial expression was looking extremely awful. At one side, already Heavenly Serpent Gang had caused a severe headache to them by betraying them, while on the other side, Su Menghan could be caught in danger any moment. While all these troubles were already going on in his life, then at such a crucial time he was stopped at the checkpoint, which was really quite annoying for him.

However, at present lots of Criminal Police were present on the scene, hence, he had to handle this matter patiently, according to the law. He couldn’t act recklessly. Moreover, his identity as an Immortal must not get exposed at any cost.

When those three people got out of the car one after another, promptly several criminal police ran towards them, in order to seize them, as per the direction of Miao Zhenqiang,

However, right at that moment, suddenly Zhao Yibei discovered something fishy, and his heart shivered out. From his angle, he could clearly see something, like the reflections of the setting sun, in the lush field, at the side of the highway.

“Not good!”

All of a sudden Zhao Yibei shouted that, at the same time he took few steps forward quickly, and jumped in front of Ye Feng.

Bang!

A heart-jolting sound of a gunshot echoed everywhere, immediately followed by a splash of blood from Zhao Yibei's forehead. This terrifying scene suddenly gave a severe shock to all the people present there, including Ye Feng.

Someone wanted to use a sniper rifle to kill Ye Feng, however, Zhao Yibei timely discovered that, and promptly jumped in front of Ye Feng, to block him from getting shot!

Since Zhao Yibei was shot in the forehead, it was totally impossible for him to survive. Scar, Miao Zhenqiang, Ye Feng and several Criminal Police, who were present there, saw him slowly falling to the ground after getting shot.

As soon as Ye Feng saw blood splashing out of his forehead, instantaneously several scenes flashed through his mind, which reminded him of his first meeting with Zhao, when this youth exchanged few words with him to awake him, so that the relationship between him and Su Menghan could progress in a positive way. Since Linjiang's trip, this guy, Zhao Yibei had always been greatly admiring him. Moreover, the goal of Scar, behind putting Zhao under Ye Feng's supervision, was also clear to Ye Feng now.

Such a vibrant handsome teenager, who was full of vigour and vitality, had actually lost his life at a place like this!

“You have courted your death!”

Immediately this thought crossed through Ye Feng's mind that it must be Miao Zhenqiang who would have arranged a sniper. This thought triggered his anger, and a hint of coldness appeared in his eyes. This person was a threat to all the people, hence, he couldn't be let off, not to mention that Zhao's death had already become a prove of it.

He moved quickly, and grabbed the neck of Miao Zhenqiang, and squeezed it with his hands, since for him it was really necessary to kill him.

But exactly at this point of time, the captain of the team impatiently shouted from one side: "There is a sniper! Protect the Bureau Chief! Everyone look for bunker!"

The moment these words came out, Ye Feng immediately reacted without wasting a single second.

His speed was so fast, that the Captain of the criminal police didn't even notice his Chief, Miao Zhenqiang had already been kidnapped by Ye Feng. However, subconsciously he issued that ordered. It was quite obviously that the sniper, in the countryside, was not arranged by them.

Very smartly, Ye Feng placed the heavy body of Miao Zhenqiang in front of his own, so that if that sniper would open fire again, he would never be caught in it.

Firstly, his Cultivation was less than ten years, secondly, he hadn't practiced Soul Search Technique yet, and lastly he had to conceal his Immortal status from everyone, so much passive points were there, and he didn't even know that currently whether he was being stared by the

sniper, or not.

However, he got an appropriate protection for now, but still it was going to be very difficult for him, to succeed in grabbing that sniper.

Until this time, numerous criminal police turned around, and found that their Chief had actually been kidnapped by Ye Feng, which startled them for a moment. After all, who this boy was, how could he be so fast?

“Yibei!”

A sad and shrilling cry, all of a sudden burst out from the mouth of Scar. A clank man, seeing his ex-wife's younger brother died under the muzzle, finally failed to his sadness, instantaneously started welling up, and shedding tears.

He moved two steps forward, lifted up the body of Zhao Yibei from the ground, held him tightly and shook him to bring him back to life. But when he noticed there was no result, he promptly took out his phone, and made a call to 120 for first aid. However, everyone already knew that the young man was shot in the forehead, there was no way he could survive, even the great Luo Shenxian couldn't save him now.

(Lastvoice : Luo Shenxian means supernatural entity or fairy.)

At this time, most of the Criminal Police were busy looking for their bunkers, either they were trying to hide behind the police vehicle, or Scar's Hummer, so as to keep the quilt, from being killed by that sniper.

Meanwhile, several other police, who had revolvers, had pulled out a

pistol aiming at Ye Feng. If, by any chance, Chief, Miao Zhenqiang had any accident, then they would definitely open fire to kill Ye Feng on the spot!

For them, such a reaction could be considered as very normal. Because, at first, Ye Feng was incredibly fast, so it wasn't possible for them to grasp him and rescue Miao Zhenqiang, and secondly, the sniper threat was too large to be avoided, and it was also out of the question for them to grab and arrest that person hidden in the form of sniper.

All were assigned here just in order to seize Ye Feng along with the other two men, and drag him to the police station. Who would have thought that a sniper would appear over there out of nowhere, did he want to take Ye Feng's life?

“Ye Feng! Lets go quickly!”

Miao Zhenqiang who was seized by Ye Feng currently by his neck, although was feeling very uncomfortable, still he tried unwilling to make a noise to say that.

“Hmmm, follow me.”

As Ye Feng could clearly see that by no means, these policemen would try to grab the sniper, since they were too afraid to catch him personally! Therefore, he pulled Miao Zhenqiang's body, and with a lightning speed, he moved towards the direction of the field, to hunt that sniper down. But he noticed that immediately several bullets were fired in his direction, aiming at him!

It would have been 100 % impossible for any ordinary person, to even move half an inch, by carrying such a heavy motionless body like Miao Zhenqiang, who was somewhere between 160 – 170 pounds. However, it was like a child's play for Ye Feng.

Although he was caught in such a critical situation, still he didn't cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, because he couldn't afford getting exposed in front of Miao Zhenqiang, that he used to practice "martial arts". Even though he hadn't used any Immortal agility technique, still his speed was way faster than any average person.

When a group of criminal police saw Ye Feng running towards the field, while carrying Miao secretary, and that too with an incredibly fast speed, they froze to the spot. This thing terrified them so badly, that they completely failed to react, and thought, was this guy really a human?

Shua! Shua!

After a few ups and downs, Ye Feng finally came to a field, which was covered with a man's height tall and dense grass. And surprisingly he found a trace of someone lying on the ground. However, the sniper had already run away, but left behind a trace, which was a pretty good sign!

"You want to run away? It's not that easy."

Ye Feng coldly snorted as he took out a knife, and the next moment, he slightly cut down the nape of Miao Zhenqiang. As a result, the Bureau Chief immediately lost his consciousness and fainted on the spot.

Afterwards, as per his plan, he continued carrying unconscious Miao Zhenqiang along with him, while simultaneously he activated Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. In a blink of an eye, his speed rose up, and it became quite handy for him, to start searching for that sniper, even more carefully, all over the place surrounded by tall grass.

Very soon, he found a clue!

At a distance of one kilometre, a strong-built man, wearing black camouflage clothes, was there. He was actually trying to escape from a tunnel, but unfortunately was caught by Ye Feng. In all fairness, just within two or three minutes, this black dressed guy ran one kilometre of distance, moreover, he had already dug a tunnel beforehand, which clearly proved that his assassination experience was extremely rich.

Unfortunately, in front of Ye Feng everything was like fleeting.

“Guala Guala?”

The moment that strong built black guy saw Ye Feng running towards him, while carrying a person, he felt as if he saw the ghost, which scared the hell out of him.

He could not understand how Ye Feng caught up with him in such a short time!

“Can you speak Chinese? Tell me who sent you here?”

Ye Feng asked that with a cold voice, and immediately engraved a solid

punch on his face. As a result, that black man, after getting punched by him, heavily fell to the ground, and spat a mouthful of fresh blood, along with several white teeth.

“Guala Guala

The Black guy was still speaking very strangely, might be in a different language. But unfortunately, Ye Feng’s English was quite poor, because of which he was completely unable to understand him.

Just when Ye Feng frowned, exactly then, that black dressed guy suddenly took out a short edge knife from the bottom of his camouflage pants, and with extremely fast speed and full force, he moved his knife towards Ye Feng’s chest, and stabbed him!

Chapter 086: Xiaohua Was Cheated

(Lastvoice : Xiaohua means the prettiest girl of the school.)

Undoubtedly, the black dressed man was a professional killer! He was truly impeccable regardless of any perspective, but regretfully he happened to encounter Ye Feng.

As the black dressed sniper pulled out a knife to pierce it in Ye Feng's heart, Ye Feng easily moved sideways and dodged it. In return Ye Feng threw a punch on his wrist, making his knife fly after a preliminary shock. He then immediately looked into his eyes and said : "Sleep!"

Immortal Technique "Hypnosis" was basically used to deal with ordinary people, since it was quite appropriate for them. However, Ye Feng's eyes barely focused on his eyes, and the black dressed sniper instantly lost his consciousness.

If Hypnosis was cast on a firm determined person like this killer, then hypnotic time couldn't stay very long, hence Ye Feng, without further delay, bluntly asked: "Who has sent you here?"

"Song Tianying"

He could speak Chinese quite fluently, but since his professionalism didn't allow him to expose the identity of his employer, hence he was speaking strangely like that. However, under the Hypnosis of Ye Feng, how could an ordinary person conceal anything!

Poof!

Right after getting the answer, without wasting any other second, Ye Feng's Zhenqi condensed sword emerged out, and he directly jabbed it into the chest of that guy, immediately followed by a fresh blood spatter from his body. This way he finished the killer of Zhao Yibei and took revenge. But that handsome youth, Zhao Yibei could never wake up.

After putting away his sword, Ye Feng kept Miao Zhenjiang together with that sniper's body, and then he moved sideways, and quickly activated Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, to return to the side of the highway, as fast as possible. Meanwhile, he also found that most of the policemen were in the bushes, trying to search Miao Zhenjiang, while very few of them were left behind on the highway. in order to keep watch on Scar.

Ye Feng walked out from the dense bushes, snorted coldly and said : “Your Chief is carried off by a man wearing a mask, you guys quickly withdraw, or else wait for him to gather up dead bodies.”

Just when his word came out, exactly then the criminal police found that beyond one km, there was a dead man in a black dress together with stupor Miao Zhenqiang, and immediately they came to the conclusion that it must be the Masked man.

Therefore, the remaining police, who stayed to keep watch on Scar, looked at each other in turmoil, and finally after thinking something, they moved aside and made a path for Ye Feng.

Ye Feng must leave this place as soon as possible. So long as he got back to Yanjing, it was impossible for him to make a call either to Old man Lin or Hongchuan.

“Scar, lets go.”

Ye Feng came closer to Scar, as he said that.

His eyes were looking towards Zhao Yibei, who was lying on the ground. There was no movement in his body. Ye Feng’s heart was feeling very uncomfortable seeing him dead like this. Just some time ago, this youth had praised him for his good looks after wearing a suit, but now he was dead.

Song Tianying would certainly have to pay for this by his life!

“It is Song Tianying who hired that killer, after getting back, quickly try to find him.”

Ye Feng’s eyes flashed with coldness.

“So it was that bastard, who was behind this?”

When Scar heard his name, he didn’t doubt for a second. Earlier, Song Hu played a very important role in Heavenly Serpent Gang, his contribution couldn’t be overlooked as well, and his performance could be considered quite satisfactory. However, his nephew Song Tianying was totally useless; he just used to loiter around all day long, behind girls and beer. Come to think of it, he even hired a sniper now to kill someone.

Now, Zhao Yibei was dead.

Being the part of this criminal world for last so many years, Scar had seen a lot of deaths so far. But this time, his mood seemed to be exactly like he had then during those days, when he saw his wife being killed brutally by that Swordsman.

“Elder brother Ye, you must teach me the martial arts!”

By putting on an aggressive expression, accompanied by two lines of tears, finally, Scar expressed his determination! Undoubtedly he had been bearing this pain patiently for so many years!

“Sure. First get in the car, ok.”

Ye Feng’s surging emotions were also fluctuating at this moment.

Scar had struggled for more than ten years, finally, when he managed to take Heavenly Serpent Gang at such a great height, after going through lots of difficulties, Song Hu and his people plotted and rebelled against him, and got colluded with Black Dragon Association. His wife and all other family members had already passed away, now no one left at his side. He had changed into an average person now, absolutely couldn’t afford such a blow.

If possible, Ye Feng would like to help him. He thought of that time when Zhu Bainiao was at his point of death, and had drawn a map close to the East China Sea, where he had buried his lost Hidden Weapon

Technique of Hidden Immortal School.

Ghost Crying Blade Technique, combined with the other martial arts techniques of Hidden Immortal School, would be very appropriate for Scar. He would probably teach him how to practice this.

Of course, he had to wait for now, at first, he had to go back to Song Tianying and Song Hu to resolve this issue.

Bringing Zhao Yibei's corpse back to Hummer, Scar sat on the driving position, and stepped on the accelerator, making Hummer run crazily towards the direction of Yanjing.

Several criminal police were there, but they couldn't dare to stop them, they just kept on watching them leaving. Soon they received the message of another team leader, that Chief Miao had been found, simultaneously a corpse of a black dressed guy had also been found there.

By a sharp weapon, the heart of that black dressed guy had been pierced and had died. His body was found beside Miao Zhenqiang's unconscious body, he should be the sniper. His identity has also been easy to spot out, he turned out to be the killer of international organizations – members of the Viper.

Although this black dressed sniper was the preliminary level killer, but still his employment price had been astonishing high, like several million! It seemed like many people wanted to see Ye Feng dead.

Originally team leader's plan was to take hold of Ye Feng along with

the other two men, but now how could he do that, he could only wait for Miao Zhenjiang to get back into senses, and then order them again. Because this time, it was totally Miao Zhenqiang's private action.

.....

When Hummer H2 speedily pulled into Yanjing City, the cell phone of Scar suddenly rang up.

Quite naturally, Scar was in an extremely foul mood at this time, hence he angrily picked it up and answered: "Who?"

"Woah Woah, brother Scar, why are you being so angry?"

A very impolite and arrogant voice of that youth passed through the phone : "is your younger male cousin dead? Hey, kindly pay a silent tribute to him on my behalf"

"Song Tianying, you courage has crossed all limits now."

By putting on a gloomy face, Scar said that to him sullenly.

"You are saying that again? Scar Brother, I don't have the heart to tell you, but still I have to say that now the era of your power and influence has already gone. Besides, also that young girl, surnamed Su is in my clutch, and soon she is going to have fun too with everybody"

Song Tianying happily said that, with a very evil tone. Actually

currently he was filled with a pleasant sensation of retaliation.

That boy, surnamed Ye had actually dared to hit him on the train! Therefore, shouldn't he ask the killer to kill him? Just listening to the tone of Scar confirmed him that the killer had definitely succeeded in his goal. Moreover, Ye Feng's woman was also in his grip now.

“If you want to save her, then come to Tianhua Casino within an hour, if time expires, I'll not wait!”

Gloomily, Song Tianying said that, and then immediately hung up the phone.

When Ye Feng heard this, his complexion suddenly changed.

As he ordered earlier that must not let Su Menghan leave the villa, then how did she get caught and carried to Tianhua Casino?

Ye Feng didn't even say anything, but Scar instantly stepped his foot on the accelerator, and with a speed of 160-170, he galloped towards the urban areas of Yanjing. Hummer's speed was really extremely fast, which was sufficient to cause a traffic chaos.

Unfortunately, looking at the license plate of Hummer, the ordinary traffic police couldn't dare to go forward and block it, hence Scar soared all the way back to the north-west city Yanjing, quite smoothly.

Sun just descended the mountain, when Hummer finally arrived and stopped at the gate of Tianhua Casino.

.....

At this time of the day, at Tianhua Casino, Song Tianying, wearing a suit, with the high nose, was sitting in a deluxe room, talking to people and was looking very handsome.

Surprisingly, the person with whom he was having a conversation right now, turned out to be Su Menghan's father, Su Xinchang.

“Hey, also thanks to you.”

Song Tianying sipped his wine, and said:. “Otherwise, it had never been really easy for us to catch your daughter.”

With a faint smile, Su Xinchang said while looking at the glass of red wine in Song Tianyin's hands : “At present, I have nothing left in this world, to work with Heavenly Serpent Gang is a big honour for me, truly.”

Su Menghan was cheated out by her own father, Su Xinchang. It was him who dragged her here from her villa.

Song Tianying smiled, and thought to himself that this time, that girl had been injected with the new drug, right? From now on, he could control her future, like how to entertain him, or treat other guys.

Such a great beauty was she, it was not like such kind could be casually

seen.....

Chapter 087: A Punch Throws Someone Down The Building!

Clad in western-style suit and tie, Song Tianying arrived in front of a room, on the sixth floor of Tianhua Casino. Originally, this room was the workplace of Scar, but now it had become a place where Su Menghan had been detained.

“How are the things here? Have you completed everything?”

He entered the room and asked that.

“Done, Song Elder brother.”

Immediately, a young guy with greasy hairstyle with a powdered face, coquettishly said that.

Song Tianying nodded in satisfaction, and then raised his head and looked inside the room. There he saw Su Menghan lying on the sofa in an unconscious state. Her charming face was looking somewhat pale, wearing a pink chiffon shirt, with a black knee length skirt, revealing a snow white skin, was appearing weak hanging on the side of a sofa.

Moreover, there were two black dressed tall guys, who were standing next to the sofa. They bowed to greet him when his eyes fell on them.

“Little girl, this new drug once injected, and you will become addicted

to it, lets see how you get rid of my palm.”

He laughed evilly, then slowly moved to the edge of the sofa, stretched out his hand, as he wanted to touch the fair, smooth and clear face of Su Menghan.

But right at this moment, the door of the room was suddenly burst opened by a person!

“Oh Song Elder brother, not good, Scar Scar elder brother has come back!”

A young guy ran up to him breathlessly and reported that.

“So what? If they have come back, what are you afraid of? Didn’t we already make a plan about how to cope up with him? Just act according to our plan, that’s all!”

Song Tianying said that somewhat impatiently.

“But, Song brother, the boy, who had thrashed brother Tie last time, has also come back together with Brother Scar!”

That young guy hastily said.

Ye Feng’s last visit to Tianhua Casino had left a deep impression in the mind of this young guy, because last time Ye Feng had badly punched brother Tie, and blatantly left the place without any fear. Hence, when

that guy saw him again, he became a little scared. Ye Feng was really a ruthless person in his eyes.

“What?”

Fianlly, his complexion took a 360 degree turn, and he became serious. Shouldn't that boy be killed by now, by that specialised killer of Viper Organization? Then how could he come back? He had spent eight million to hire a sniper, and had faced several hardships to ask Miao Zhenqiang, to set up a checkpoint for inspection. Wasn't it a very difficult way of beating the flowing water?

“It's useless! Hurry up, go downstairs, and pass this order to the assigned gunmen, to kill the kid together with Scar!”

His face revealed a colour of regret, although his decision to kill Ye Feng here in this Casino, might create several problems for him, since Ye Feng was related with Yanjing Lin Clan somehow. But now he wasn't in the mood to think about this stuff.

“Really? I'd like to see how you want to kill me.”

Just then, a voice familiar to Song Tianying, as rumoured, suddenly passed through from outside the room.

The voice barely fell, and Ye Feng wearing a western style suit, burst in the room like ghosts and demons in general. Immediately he punched that messenger guy, made him fly several meters in the air. As a result, that guy spat a mouthful of fresh blood in the air, then fell heavily to the

ground, and his chapter came to end, as he couldn't move again.

Other people present in the room immediately reacted. Those two black dressed tall guys quickly took out their pistols in his hands.

But Ye Feng's speed was extraordinarily fast, by leaving several blurred afterimages in-situ, he instantly arrived in front of Song Tianying, grabbed him by the collar, and picked him up!

“Ye Feng, how you didn't die!”

Panic-stricken, Song Tianying made an effort to struggle hard and break himself free, his complexion had also paled down, how couldn't he think through that Ye Feng could survive even from the ambush of killer.

“That you don't need to worry about, just think about how you are going to meet your death.”

Ye Feng snorted lightly, as he made a huge effort with his hands, and threw the whole body of Song Tianying into the air.

Then he stood firmly, and clenched his right fist, immediately his whole body's qi started accumulating and condensing around his fist, and finally with an extremely sudden and swift movement, he punched him in his stomach!

Thump!

At his current Cultivation level, the punch he threw at him, had at least 500 kilograms of force. This one punch, when touched him, he directing flew in the air, like being thrown out as a volleyball, and then heavy slammed on the glass window. With a “bang” sound, the glass cracked-up, and he fell down!

With the sad and pitiful screams, Song Tianying’s body fell down with a very fast speed, and soon his screams stopped suddenly, it seemed like he plunged to death.

Ye Feng could feel that downstairs, outside the bar, things had become somewhat chaotic instantly!

Ye Feng’s heart finally felt a little better, his pain was slightly subsided after punching that beast down to his death. This was the real help to Zhao Yibei’s revenge.

If Zhao Yibei hadn’t block the bullet aiming towards Ye Feng, then he would not have died yet, it was 100 % an undeniable fact!. Zhao Yibei sacrificed his life for him. Therefore, it was his responsibility to take revenge on behalf of Zhao Yibei.

Since Song Tianying died such a death, he now hoped that it could make Zhao Yibei rest in peace.

Ye Feng sighed, as he knew that this thing might cause trouble , however, he was not the slightest bit afraid of anything now. Rather he took an another decision, Song Hu, the uncle of Song Tianying, he wouldn’t let him go as well.

He turned around and saw two black dressed tall men stood beside the sofa, holding a pistol, and carrying a distracted look on his face.

Obviously, they hadn't expected that Ye Feng would barge in so decisively, and punch Song Tianying which would throw him down. The might of that punch had already scared them, and on top of that throwing him down from the sixth floor, and he wouldn't die, that would be just very strange!

“Ye elder brother!”

Those two people quickly put away the pistol, and respectfully greeted him, although a trace of fear could be seen in their eyes.....

“Aren't you Song Tianying's side?”

Ye Feng asked that lightly, and immediately shifted his gaze towards Su Menghan lying on sofa. He noticed her pretty face had turned pale, which caused a bit of pain in his heart. Also he didn't know what injustice had been done to her, after carrying her here?

“Ye elder brother, since beginning he have always been brother Scar's subordinates and have been at his side!”

One of the black dressed tall guys said in a lower voice: “Since Song Tianying was being very rampant, we had to temporarily succumb to his

“These have nothing to do with me, she doesn't like this place, then

how did she come here?”

Ye Feng asked that as he arrived close to Su Menghan, hugged her tender body in his bosom, and felt her palpitation. He was suffering from the feeling of guilt.

If only he had come back a bit earlier, she would not have to suffer these hardships.

“This.....”

The two black dressed tall guys looked at each other in blank dismay, since they didn't know should say.

“If you guys have something to say, just say it, don't dawdle.”

Ye Feng lightly hummed, and raised his head to look around. He saw that besides those two Black dressed tall guys, there was a greasy hair and powdered face youth, who was trying to slip out secretly.

“You want to escape?”

Ye Feng moved forward, and directly grabbed that guy by his hands.

“Ye elder brother, it's him!”

One of the black dressed guy finally ventured, and by clenching his

teeth, he pointed his finger towards that wretched young and said: “Just recently, this guy has injected a new kind of drug to Ms. Ye

“What?”

As soon as Ye Feng heard that, his complexion turned black, and he completely failed to control his surging emotions, his Zhenqi suddenly broke out, and incautiously he crushed the neck of that youth into crumbs!

Su Menghan was injected with drugs!

Bang!

Ye Feng also threw him down from the sixth floor, and hastily rushed towards Su Menghan to examine her condition.

Now he suddenly felt that the way Song Tianying was killed, was such an easy death for him. That bastard deserved a brutal death, how could he dare to inject new drugs to Su Menghan!

At this time, a group of people appeared at the door of the room. It was Scar with his people, who had brought Su Xinchang. Actually, Scar grabbed him when he was trying to escape from the spot, and presented him before Ye Feng.

“Trust me! I really didn’t know that bastard would inject drug to Menghan, ah, really

Su Xinchang was frightened to urinate, was weeping and wailing.

“Ye elder brother, this guy has plotted with Song Tianying, and swindled Ms. Ye out, how do you want to deal with him?”

Scar said that in a sinking voice, as he pushed Su Xinchang forward, making him kneel down at the entrance of the room.

Su Xinchang looked inside the room, and when he noticed that there was a very ugly expression on Ye Feng’s face as if he was boiling with a cruel killing intention, his heart trembled with fear, and he began constantly thinking about how to escape out from here.

He didn’t have thought that Scar would still survive, even though Song Tianying had arranged 5-6 gunmen to deal with him. Because Ye Feng was now being unwittingly angry, and he had finished them up in just one fell swoop, moreover he also mercilessly punched Song Tianying down to his death.

Chapter 088: Xiaohua's Immortal Cultivation

Ye Feng was already in an awful mood.

Seeing Su Xinchang sitting on his knees, at the entrance of the room, he didn't say much, but said : "Bring him home first, there I will have a talk with him."

He wanted to take Su Menghan back to the villa, as soon as possible, so that he could try to remove the drugs present in her body, with the help of his Zhenqi.

"Yes."

This time, Scar directly called Ye Feng as "Ye Elder brother" in the public, and other people didn't have anything too big to respond.

Ye Feng's relationship with Lin Clan had already spread all over in Yanjing, obviously, all the people of Heavenly Serpent Gang must be aware of it already. Could Scar have such a younger male cousin? It was close to impossible.

"But Ye Elder brother."

At first, Scar thought for a while, and then said : "Song Hu is not here in Tianhua Casino at the moment. He might have gone to have a discussion with Black Dragon Association. So, what should be our next move?"

“Regarding the matter of the Gang, I won’t go to manage it, you have to take care of it.”

Ye Feng shook his head, and directly left the room while holding Su Menghan’s soft and tender body.

He was not even the least bit interested in the matters of Gang, however, regarding Song Hu, he would certainly kill him! Of course, since the opposite party wasn’t here right now, hence he would let him live his dog’s life for the time being. But, immediately after curing Su Menghan, he would definitely take him on.

“Two of you, go with Ye Elder brother to his villa!”

Scar gave an order to those two black dressed tall guys, and then together with Su Xinchang, he returned to ‘Qingfeng Park’ as per the instruction of Ye Feng.

Just thinking about the death of Zhao Yibei, suddenly made Scar feel a little tired. So many years of hard work to establish his gang, Heavenly Serpent Gang, but in reality, he failed to protect even his own loved ones, several times. Then what was the point of running such a big gang?

As he saw Ye Feng’s back while he was departing, he finally came to a conclusion, and set his firm resolve. For him, after getting things completely done over here, he would just follow Ye Feng from now on. And this determination of him was finally made by keeping this point in mind, that someday in future, he would get trained by him, to become his number one right-hand man!

.....

Holding Su Menghan in his hands, Ye Feng went outside, and got in the car, BMW. A trusted man of Scar personally drove him back.

Icy-silver BMW car reminded him of Zhao Yibei. Now he had finally avenged for him, but it was still difficult for him to cheer up his heart.

He shook his head, for him currently, the first priority before anything was to deal with Su Menghan's things.

Ye Feng thought that today during the daytime, this Xiaohua had talked to him about school's mock test result on the telephone. All of a sudden his mind ceased and he felt dazzled just by thinking that how could Su Xinchang do such a thing to his own daughter? Even if he didn't know that Song Tianying would inject drugs to her, but still deceiving his own daughter and handing her over to the underworld people, wasn't it too trash?

If Su Xinchang were an ordinary person, Ye Feng would have directly killed him to put an end to this trouble, but since he was Su Menghan's father, therefore, how to deal with him was quite puzzling for him. Hence, he would rather prefer to see what would be Su Menghan's decision, when she would wake up.

Soon, two cars pulled into 'Qingfeng Park', and stopped in front of Ye Feng's villa.

Ye Feng, while holding Su Menghan, opened the door of his villa, and

stepped inside. Two black dressed tall guys followed him, along with the detained Su Xinchang.

“You guys have a sit, just don’t run all over the place. Also, keep a good watch on Su Xinchang, and wait for me to get down and start dealing with him.”

After finished saying that to those tall guys, Ye Feng went upstairs carrying Su Menghan.

As those two guys heard that, they looked at each other in blank dismay, they never had thought that Ye Feng would be so polite to them. Moreover, unexpectedly he also asked them to sit down. Certainly, Ye Feng asked them to sit until he got down, still they didn’t dare to sit, rather they stood firmly in the hall, watching Su Xinchang.

Upstairs, as Ye Feng holding her went inside the bedroom, he smelled a faint delicate fragrance. That was this young girl’s unique fragrance, which could make people feel completely relaxed.

“Fortunately, I came back to Yanjing at a right time, because, in addition to injecting drugs to her, that bastard could have done other harmful things to her. But he didn’t get enough time for that. However, still this drug alone has been difficult enough

While thinking about this, Ye Feng gently placed her delicate body on the soft bed.

“Umm.....”

She finally showed a little movement along with a sound, somewhat drowsily she opened her eyes, and saw Ye Feng looking at her, with a very anxious-looking face. She rubbed her eyes, as she couldn't believe that she would see him in such an anxious state.

“Menghan, I finally came back tell me, how are you feeling now?”

Ye Feng opened his mouth to ask that.

“I I feel like I was knocked down probably What happened?”

She said that a little weakly, and then tried to sit up.

“Don't move.”

Ye Feng stopped her, it seemed like she didn't know anything about this drug thing. Hence, he decided that not telling her would be a good choice.

Somewhat haggardly, but with a touch of concern for him, which could be clearly seen in her beautiful eyes, she said : “What happened about your trip and where had you gone? Did that matter go through?”

“Yes, everything has been all right, It's just”

He was about to say something, but hesitated.

Suddenly a thought crossed his mind, there were no such things like drugs in the World of the Immortals, was it because Cultivation practice never let people become addictive to any drug? Even if it was the worst Immortal Cultivation Technique, but when it was in revolution, it used to automatically clear away all impurities present within one's body. Therefore, people of Immortal world rarely fell sick.

If it could also make Su Menghan capable of beginning practicing Immortal Cultivation, then it would be good

As he was thinking that, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring present on his finger, suddenly lit up!

This thing suddenly attracted the attention of Su Menghan. She had been seeing him wearing this ring from quite a long time, and had always been thinking what was the meaning of it. Now for her, it was like, could it also shine now? Very miraculous appearance!

A month ago, exactly like now, this Ancient Dragon Sword Ring had also shone brightly then, and then a mystical air current entered Ye Feng's body, and immediately formed core Dan in his Dantian.

But now?

He didn't have any hesitation, he immediately put out his hands, and tightly hugged her soft tender body.

“Ah You.....”

Su Menghan wasn't ready for that, hence, this action of him suddenly startled her.

“Don't move.”

Ye Feng softly whispered: “There is a secret that I have never told you. Actually, I am an Immortal who can practice many Immortal Cultivation Techniques Now, I want to also make you an Immortal, do you want to be?”

“Immortal, Cultivation? Are you kidding

The secret of Ye Feng frightened her. Terms like Immortal, Cultivation, and so on, were not new to her. Ofcourse she already knew about this, after all, she had seen a lot of things in the past related to this, such as the Internet novel “Execute the Immortal” and the likes.

However, was Ye Feng really an Immortal who knew Immortal Cultivation?

Was this possible?

She didn't believe such a thing, but due to the surge of warm air into her body, the area below her navel began to release heat. That was the position of her Dantian, accompanied with the tingling and itching feeling all over her body.

“Really good! Now there is core Dan in your Dantian, I’ll teach you one of the Immortal Cultivation Techniques, just follow me, and try to start revolving just as I say.”

Now Ye Feng could feel the formation of core Dan within her body, and his face instantly lit up. He immediately started teaching her Star Tomb Tactics. He wanted her to clearly understand the complete process of this technique.

However, Su Menghan was sceptical about it. On the basis of Ye Feng’s instructions, she really felt that a flow of air had suddenly started within her body. She tried to mobilise the streams, which suddenly startled her, because just like what Ye Feng said, her body began to warm up.

“Can you do it?”

Ye Feng was concerned about her, therefore, he anxiously asked that.

With the help of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, he could make Su Menghan Cultivation Immortal, which was unusually lucky. But this option alone was not enough to let Ye Feng have a peace of mind, since to begin the process of Cultivation, Immortal Cultivation talent was needed, which was considered as the most important step!

Also, he didn’t have any idea, whether Su Menghan had any talent or not?

Back then, he just took a second to comprehend the full process of Star Tomb Tactics, and had completed the big heavenly circulation just in an

hour.

“It seems to be a bit strange feeling

Su Menghan finally succeeded in controlling Zhenqi within her body, but her mind was piled up with lots of question. She was puzzled, even if he was an Immortal, why did he come back to teach her Immortal Cultivation? Could it be that something was going to happen?

While on the other side, Ye Feng was a bit tensed. Actually what making Ye Feng a bit worried was, did she actually know that she had been injected with a new drug while she was in the stupor?

He closely hugged her in his bosom, and by moving his own Zhenqi, he started guiding her the initial practice. Back then, Su Feiying had also taught him like that, but the only difference was, he had a gifted talent, therefore soon Su Feiying had loosened him to let him practice on his own.

As time passed quietly, the drugs within her body also resided, along with the flow of Zhenqi which gradually discharged from her body

Chapter 089: A Dead-End

When Su Menghan finally managed to complete one big heavenly revolution of Star Tomb Tactics, that gave a feeling of relief to Ye Feng. Henceforth, Star Tomb Tactics would work on its own automatically, it didn't need to constantly pay attention to it. Even more, it used to enhance one's Cultivation naturally.

He looked at the time, from the moment she began practicing to till now, altogether she had spent a total one and a half-hours of time, which was equal to almost three hours.

“Although, your innate talent is inferior to me, but it's not that bad.”

Ye Feng said that somewhat joyfully.

In reality, this kind of innate talent of her was already considered as top-notch talent in the World of the Immortals. There were many Immortals, who used to spend even a whole day, to complete their first big heavenly revolution, during the starting phase of their practice. From now onwards, if Su Menghan would ever want to practice any Immortal Technique in the future, then she would be definitely a lot quicker than any other average person.

She opened her beautiful eyes slowly, and felt that her body seemed to have become a bit different. Even more, her haggardness had also vanished all of a sudden without leaving a trace, and she had become very energetic out of the blue.

“Ye Feng.”

She softly shouted his name.

“What happened?”

Ye Feng loosened her soft and tender body, and smiled gently while staring at her pretty face.

“Thank you, thank you so much for trusting me.....”

At the moment, her heart was overflowing with emotions: “This must be your biggest secret, right? I certainly won’t say it out to anybody”

“Take a shower quickly, I’m going downstairs first, and will wait for you.”

Ye Feng gently smiled, but didn’t say anything, he patted her shoulder softly, and then set out to leave.

Since she had just completed one big heavenly revolution, the impurities within her body along with the drugs had been completely cleared out, leaving behind a thin layer of oil on the surface of her skin, making it very glossy. Her condition was like this, if she didn’t take a bath, then she couldn’t meet anyone in this condition.

Although Ye Feng asked her to shower, but that was not needed, since she could clearly realize her current situation. She was in an extreme

shock seeing her oily skin, hence, she quickly jumped out of the bed, but suddenly remembered that, was there any bathroom upstairs in this building?

“Come downstairs with your clothes, all right.”

After saying that, he took one step down the stairs.

Downstairs, those two tall guys were still standing and guarding Su Xinchang, without even moving a half step. When Ye Feng saw them like this, he truly admired Heavenly Serpent Gang for hiring some pretty elites; after all, that was a whole three hours.

“Come outside, lets have a talk there.”

Ye Feng waved his hand, as he looked at Su Xinchang cold sweating, and then he took the lead and went out of the hall.

Standing continuously for whole three hours, had turned Su Xinchang's feet numb. But as soon as he saw Ye Feng coming downstairs, he finally heaved a sigh of relief. However, he already knew that when Ye Feng would come down, Su Xinchang's bad time would start then.

“He took a long time, what were these two people doing upstairs?”

Su Xinchang couldn't bear but think about this, in fact, he had this thought crossed his mind, countless times during these last three hours. And then he finally arrived at a conclusion that there could be only one thing, that could be given by Su Menghan to him, and was

Had his daughter finally become Ye Feng's woman?

These four people came in the courtyard, under the light of the moon and stars, Ye Feng lazily leaning against the wall, lightly asked : “Tell me, what happened in these last few days? And exactly how did you join hands with that kind of person Song Tianying ”

At present, Ye Feng was in a relatively more relaxed mood, after all, not only Su Menghan had been cured and was all right now, but he had also found the wondrous use of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring. As the matter stood right now, he could also make Long Wan'er an Immortal, which was awesome news for him.

Naturally, he wasn't in a hurry in case of Long Wan'er, because the relationship between these Clans was really

Seeing that Ye Feng's facial expression had improved a bit, Su Xinchang also slightly calmed down and changed his mood. Finally he started telling about his bitter experiences in these days.

Ever since that night in the Jingcheng restaurant, Xie family had started causing lots of troubles to him. But after seeing Old Man Lin there in the restaurant, the share of Su Xinchang in Su Sheng Group had gradually started eroding, a small portion was snatched away by other Xie people, while the majority of shares were sold to Lin Clan's Group, at an extremely low price.

Just like how Lin Clan's company, Lin Group had a huge number of shares in one big multinational corporation. Exactly like that, when Su

Sheng Group's shares were being sold at such a low price, naturally they would love to accept this offer.

Therefore, originally from a billionaire, Su Xinchang turned into a bankrupt, who didn't have a thing left in the world. Moreover, Xie Min also asked for the divorce, because of two reasons. Firstly, because of his daughter Su Menghan, and secondly Lin Clan's snatched away his everything by taking hold of his Su Shen Group, wasn't this like courting death? Xie people were also assuming that Su Xinchang and his daughter surely would never have any good end!

Xie Clan was afraid of Lin Clan, rather than Ye Feng, therefore, they made such a choice, which was quite obvious and acceptable. Even his Secretary, Hu Meimei directly left him, so that she could replace Xie Min's uncle in Su Sheng Group.

Nothing left for him in this world, it was like a dead-end for him. Naturally, he was not at all willing to go on like this. By chance, he got an opportunity to join a mysterious organization.

This mysterious organization made him coordinate with Heavenly Serpent Gang's Song Hu. The plan was to get rid of Ye Feng first, and then take hold of Heavenly Serpent Gang! From his point of view, the condition was matchless and very attractive, which immediately stirred up his interest.

Thus, the intense planning started taking its dangerous form. As per their plan, initially they wanted to eradicate all the trusted subordinates of Scar, present in Heavenly Serpent Gang. Afterwards, the next step was to hire new professionals with the help of Su Xinchang, and soon all the assets of Heavenly Serpent Gang would fall under their control. Finally

they would fix their prime focus on the rapid development of a group of loyal subordinates.

Today's plan was to attack Ye Feng when he would be outside the city Yanjing, in order to try avoiding any kind of trouble which might be caused anytime, by Lin Clan. After finishing Ye Feng, today's next plan was to directly put an end to Scar's life. Thus by this way, the total control of this gang would come in their grip.

Unfortunately, the series of plans made by them, one after another, was terribly devastated by Ye Feng.

Regarding Su Xinchang deceiving Su Menghan, and dragging her out of the villa, and letting her fall in the clutch of Song Tinaying, was completely a secondary matter. It was only to satisfy the desire of Song Tianying, and nothing more than that. It had nothing to do with their plan to overtake Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Su Xinchang had originally thought, if Su Menghan would develop a liking for Song Tianying, then in future, with the help of a mysterious organization, he could be able to jointly control Heavenly Serpent Gang along with its big Casino. Really, he didn't have expected that Song Tianying would inject drugs to his daughter.

“Did any other mysterious organization contact you? Like Cai Shao ever contacted you?”

Ye Feng pondered for a while, then asked that at once.

It appeared like nowadays he had two main rivals, one was that mystical organisation which was under the control of Cai Shao. And the second was undoubtedly Long Clan from the Martial arts world. But if he wouldn't come up with the identity of the masked man, then the threat of Long Clan could be considered insignificant, temporarily.

“Cai Shao?”

After hearing this name, Su Xinchang felt a bit puzzled, obviously he hadn't heard this name ever.

“Never mind.”

Ye Feng shook his head, it seemed like the opposite party didn't consider Su Xinchang as an important figure. Hence how could it be possible that Cai Shao would personally contact him.

“Well, now tell me, how do you want to deal with this situation?”

Putting on a calm and composed appearance, Ye Feng looked at him, while waiting for his reply.

Su Xinchang gawked, then with a sigh, he said: “Can I see Menghan?”

“No problem, right now she is in the bath, wait for a while.”

Ye Feng said that, as he look towards him coldly: “But if you still want to cheat her, then don't blame me for being impolite.”

Su Xinchang smiled: “Don’t worry, she has become a drug addict, all because of me. As a father, I have gone too far, as long as she is willing to forgive me, nothing matters to me anymore.....”

Su Xinchang’s reply startled him, since it was totally unexpected. He felt that Su Xinchang’s facial expressions was not falsely framed, was he really suffering from repentance and guilt?

Moreover, why was he so sure that his daughter had become addicted to drugs? Might be, he had known that recently several new drugs had entered the market, with a very strong addiction capability, so he was feeling sorry for his daughter.

Unfortunately, he didn’t know that Su Menghan had started practicing Immortal Cultivation and had already removed all the toxins out of her body. For those, who used to practice Immortal Cultivation, the word addiction was a ridiculous term.

“Drug addiction? What are you talking about?”

At this time, after taking her bath, Su Menghan came out in good clothes, and just happened to hear Su Xinchang saying such things related to drug addiction, which aroused her interest and implanted doubts in her mind.

Chapter 090: Long Wan'er Arrives

Immediately after taking a bath, Su Menghan, wearing a light blue lace dress, gracefully came to the entrance, her long and luxuriant hair was looking somewhat wet, apparently she came out without blow-drying her hair.

She heard Ye Feng and Su Xinchang talking outside, something about drug addiction. Hence, she couldn't help but came outside, and directly asked about what was the matter of this addiction?

Seeing her outside, Ye Feng went towards her, and whispered a few words in her ear. Anyway, now she had started practising Immortal Cultivation, and had already thoroughly eliminated the drug addiction from her body, hence telling her about it wouldn't be a big deal now.

After listening to what he had to say, Su Menghan suddenly realised, and in a flash, she thought of an idea.

“Can we lie to him?”

Su Menghan winked.

“Understood.”

Ye Feng smiled, as he nodded his head.

They finished whispering, and finally came to the courtyard in front of Su Xinchang. As for those two tall guys were concerned, they were standing outside the yard, like personal security guards.

Seeing those two people gradually approaching towards him, Su Xinchang became a bit nervous. Especially after seeing Su Menghan's condition, her face wasn't looking quite good, which made him very anxious. He thought that no matter what, but when a person came to know that he had been injected with drugs, and now infected with drug addiction, how could it be possible for him to be in the good mood?

“What do you have to say?”

She came and stood close to Ye Feng, her beautiful eyes were looking at Su Xinchang. Very sadly she asked that, as if she just learned that she was infected with a drug addiction.

“I Menghan, I am a beast, I am not a human.”

Su Xinchang's corners of the mouth were trembling because of guilt feeling, by putting on a forced smile on his face, he continued : “So long as you can forgive me, just let me know what do you want me to do.”

“What more can you give me now?”

As she said that, a painful expression covered her face, as if she was going through an extreme suffering.

“I.....”

Su Xinchang didn't know what should he say, ah, as of now, was he still able to give anything to her?

“At least at least I still have a house and a car Menghan, you can forgive me, right? We can again live together

When everyone around him, left him and walked away one after another, he was left behind alone, with a very bitter and painful heart. Now he didn't have a thing in this whole world. Was Su Menghan also willing to return to his side?

As everyone knew it that She simply never cared how many assets, cars and buildings her father had. All these stuff never mattered to her. Only if her father had been really nice and sincere towards her, then she could be happily willing to endure any hardship, just to live by his side.

Unfortunately.....

“A house and a car, what's the use of them for me now?”

Su Menghan was awfully sad, it seemed just by looking at her face, that she would start crying any moment : “I am in this miserable condition, just because of you, you have really harmed me like this.”

These words of Menghan suddenly jolted his heart out.

When he came to know that Song Tianying had injected a drug to his

daughter, he had already regretted a bit for his action. Now seeing Su Menghan shouting so loudly on him, for pushing her into this terrible condition, finally awakened him.

He looked at her pure face, and thought that this was his daughter, who had been actually injected with drugs, and had turned into a drug addict!

Suddenly, he became a little too afraid to remember, that wasn't it him who had harmed his own daughter by dragging her into this addiction?

He thought that in case he earned wealth and became rich again, but still he couldn't do anything for her, because not even his money could do anything to resolve this issue. Her daughter's life was about to end, just one year left for her from now on

“I don't want to see you again.”

She gently leant against the body of Ye Feng, and while gazing at his father, said : “Regarding this previous matter, I don't have any desire to blame you for that. But if you really have any conscience, then promise me one thing.”

“What's the matter? As long as you say it, I'll definitely help you accomplish it!”

Su Xinchang immediately nodded.

“Then tell me the truth about my grandmother's car accident. I must

make the criminal obtain the proper punishment for his deeds.”

Su Menghan said with tears in her eyes.

Su Xinchang listened to that, and hesitated a bit, but when he thought about the current condition of Su Menghan, with a sigh he gave up finally. Let it be, she was under this situation, and the only thing she wanted to know was this. Was it still needed to hide it from her?

Hence, Su Xinchang finally began narrating the dust-laden past events from six years back.

Originally, in the past Su Xinchang wanted to marry Xie Min, however, Su Menghan’s grandmother wasn’t in this favour, and she wanted to do every possible thing to stop this marriage. The reason was, she clearly noticed that the aura around Xie Min was quite dark and evil, as if she would never be good for Menghan’s growth.

But because of this, a grudge actually took birth in Xie Min’s heart. Six years ago, Xie Min conspired with her younger brother Xie Chengye, and hired a person, to falsely create an accident and kill her grandmother. And they also succeeded in their plan, they intentionally created an accident and ultimately killed her grandmother.

When Su Xinchang happened to know about it, everything had already been done. He didn’t have the choice to accuse Xie Min and Xie Chengye, instead he chose to help them in hiding the truth. Moreover, he also helped that hired man in getting rid of all charges, and then compensated a huge money to finish things up properly.

Because, at that time, Su Sheng Group was still in the development stage, and Su Xinchang was in an urgent need of Xie Min's resources

“As expected, it's really them.”

Ye Feng thought in his mind, that it seemed like in Jingcheng restaurant, whatever he had observed was 100 % right. About this incident, except these three people, Xie Min, Xie Chengye and Su Xinchang, nobody knew a thing about it.

Finally after knowing the truth, Su Menghan's heart felt a huge relief. Then Su Xinchang said : “Now, I'll surely drag both of them, Xie Min and Xie Chengye to the court. When the time comes, you must appear in the court to testify.”

Su Xinchang's act was to shelter the criminals. Although he wasn't the part of that conspiracy, still concealing the crime for almost three years was itself a big crime. But since he would appear in court multiple times to testify on his own initiative, this could also reduce discretion of his punishment.

He slowly nodded his head: “Well, then I should go”

“Then, for the time being, you stay together with Scar.”

Ye Feng beckoned with his hand : “Don't try to escape, otherwise by my ability, I can easily find you.”

“Got it.”

Hearing that somewhat scared him, and he started cold sweating, but still he nodded. As he knew, how Ye Feng punched Song Tianying and threw him down from the sixth floor! If Ye Feng was letting him go now, that was the best thing for him. Moreover, he would never dare to think about running away, since Ye Feng had a relationship with Lin Clan, even if he tried to escape, where would he go then?

Watching those two tall guys escorting Su Xinchang to the car, and then after he boarded in, the car carried off, Su Menghan couldn't help but smiled. She raised her white hands to wipe off her eyes hardly, to squeeze out all tears.

“Your acting was awesome.”

Ye Feng also smiled back, while hugging her shoulders, he praised her for her performance. If she hadn't played well, and hadn't made Su Xinchang feel her despair of the drug addiction, then this thing certainly would not have been so smooth.

However, Ye Feng could have easily made Su Xinchang reveal the truth with the help of 'Hypnosis', however, the side-effect was whenever the enemy tried to resist Hypnotism, that used to cause damage to his brain. And after using Hypnosis several times, very probably it would turn him into an idiot. After all the opposite party was Su Menghan's father, not using Hypnosis on him was certainly a better choice.

As Su Menghan said that she would move to court, for justice, Ye Feng had no opinion about it. He was not in the World of the Immortals anymore, rather he was in the modern city, couldn't rely on anything

violent.

“Was it really?”

Su Menghan's face suddenly turned bright red, as Ye Feng hugged her. Moreover, she didn't try to break herself free, rather she stuck to him more tightly, and said : “Originally if I had made him know that I haven't become the drug addict, wouldn't that have aroused his suspicion? I don't want people to know that I am an Immortal like you

Whatever she said just now was also right, until now, there had been no way to cure people who had been suffering from the new drug addiction. Su Menghan didn't become a drug addict, if this thing would come out in public, then it would definitely arouse their suspicion.

“Huh?”

At this time, when Su Menghan was very close in Ye Feng's arms, suddenly she saw something, and quickly drew two steps back.

“What happened?”

Ye Feng asked that with some doubts.

“She came again.”

Su Menghan was looking outside the door of the villa.

Ye Feng chased her eyes, looked outside the villa along with her vision, and remained stunned for a moment.

Long Wan'er? How did she come over here?

He saw a silhouette of someone, standing opposite to the villa, under a big tree, who appeared somewhat familiar, wasn't that the figure of Long Wan'er?

At this time, Long Wan'er was standing on the roadside, with folded hands, and was constantly looking towards the villa. There was a touch of sadness on her delicate pretty face. At first, Ye Feng couldn't trust his eyes, but later seeing this image of her made his heart feel a bit of pain and uneasiness.

Chapter 091: You Are Him

Seeing Long Wan'er standing outside the villa, Su Menghan looked towards Ye Feng, and softly asked : “Has she come here looking for you?”

Ye Feng replied as if he guessed : “Probably, let me go and check.”

Actually, Long Wan'er must have come here in order to ask Ye Feng about the whereabouts of that Masked man, but it wasn't necessary for him, to give any explanation to Su Menghan about it.

“Well, I'll go first.”

Surprisingly, the presence of Long Wan'er didn't trigger Su Menghan's anger, instead, she smiled as she raised her hands and wrapped them around Ye Feng's neck in front of Long Wan'er, and then pressed her lips against his cheek and kissed him. While doing so, her face turned bright red, and then she quickly turned around to go into the house.

However, the sudden action of Su Menghan startled Ye Feng, and he felt helpless. Apparently by doing this, she tried to declare in front of Long Wan'er, that Ye Feng totally belonged to her.

Afterwards, he turned back and saw Long Wan'er still stood under the tree, outside the villa, somewhat lonely. Her figure was looking wonderful under the moonlight. Her snow-white long skirt was drawing the outline of her exquisite body, which forced him to recall that incident, which took place in the ancient tomb, when he was with her

and with her overflowing impetuous passion

He shook his head and quickly stepped forward towards her.

“I said, who are you after all? And why did you come again?”

He shouted to ask that. At present, he must not get exposed at any cost, that he was that Masked man.

“First of all, let me apologise to you

As Long Wan'er saw him running towards her, she became somewhat disturbed and nervous, just by the thought of meeting with him : “I'm sorry.”

It seemed like she was being very shy and timid, there were not many people in this world who had seen this side of her before, including Ye Feng. There was an impression, that this young girl had not always been very strong, then why did she put on the role of being pathetic and pitiful at present?

Ye Feng felt a bit strange seeing her saying 'sorry' multiple times, hence he asked: “Do you have a fever or something, and have you come here especially just to apologise to me?”

“No, it's not.....”

With a bit of embarrassment, she continued: “Actually, I have come

over here, just to ask you about your friend Mo Jiuge, where is he now? I'm looking for him.”

As soon as he heard that, he immediately thought in his heart, that the reason of her sudden visit was exactly the same just like he expected. Therefore, he felt a bit relieved, and finally by loosening his tone, said: “I really don't know

“Really, is that so?”

As she said that, her beautiful eyes suddenly swept his right hand: “What a coincidence, ah! You have the same ring just like him.”

“Ah, it's just a coincidence.”

Ye Feng said that smilingly, actually about this matter, he already had an excuse ready beforehand to cope up with this situation: “We have a pretty good relationship, he told me once to put on this ring, since wearing it can be a good self-defense

Although she clearly heard his reply, but didn't speak a thing, instead, her eyes were stubbornly fixated at him, as if she was trying to judge something.

“Hey, what are you looking at?”

Seeing her sharply staring at him, his heart somewhat shivered out. Hence, he promptly waved his hand, and said:. “If there is no other matter left to be discussed, then I will return.”

“Are you really leaving? Just like this?”

Long Wan'er sighed, and then said in a soft voice : “With great difficulty, I ran out and came on this trip, just because I wanted to see you again

“To see me? You don't want to look for Mo Jiuge— -”

Ye Feng said while shaking his head, but all of a sudden he was interrupted by Long Wan'er.

“You are him! Don't you want to admit it?”

As she said that, she quickly grabbed his arm, simultaneously raised her head and looked at him : “You can deceive others, but can't fool me, I can never forget your smell.”

“Crap! Do you have a dog nose?”

Perplexed Ye Feng panicked, and tried to break himself free from her hand, but was totally unable to get away from her clutch. Therefore, instantly he cast out ‘Covert Kill Technique’, to conceal his Cultivation, so as to avoid revealing his secret.

“It doesn't matter, just come back with me to my house, Long Clan.”

While panting in rage, she said that and started pulling his arm

stubbornly, to take him away with herself.

Ye Feng thought in his heart that the current situation was not at all favourable for him, it seemed like this young girl had gone crazy. Therefore, in this critical situation, should he really obey her and get carried off? But in case he revolted now, and cast out any move to cope up with her, then wouldn't it be proved that he was definitely Mo Jiuge?

He somewhat hesitated for a moment, and got pulled away by her around ten meters.

While on the other side, from the balcony of the second floor of the villa, Su Menghan was quietly watching at those two people. Seeing Long Waner tugging at him, and he was also letting him gradually pulled away by her, she became a little anxious.

She still remembered that incident from the last time, which happened at the entrance of People's Hospital, when Ye Feng was kicked by her, and then she said "ordinary people" or something to him. Could it be that this young girl was also a Cultivation Immortal?

Su Menghan immediately wanted to go downstairs to catch up with them, but then she thought something, and refrained herself from doing so.

"It appears like Ye Feng doesn't want to get involved with her, I must not act recklessly and go out over there, in case I mess up the things, it won't be good then"

If Ye Feng would know about her present viewpoint, then he would certainly praise her for her good understanding.

At this moment, he had already been carried off to the gate of the neighbourhood, as he had no other option left.

“I said, beauty, you must have the wrong person. But still you are pulling me like this, so can I consider this like you are kidnapping me, ah?”

Although he kept on saying this over and over, but couldn't succeed in dispelling her thought.

“Nothing matters to me anymore, you are coming back with me, besides my dad also wants to see you.”

Very firmly, she said that.

“All right, then tell me, where is your house? What does your dad do? And again what is the relationship between you and me?”

Ye Feng tried to pretend as if he didn't know anything about her, therefore, one after another he blew up several questions.

“Why don't you acknowledge it?”

While she said that, she turned her head all of a sudden and looked at him. There were tears in her beautiful eyes, as if any moment they would

spill from her eyes and run down her cheeks : “Are you ignoring me? Or holding something against me?”

“I.....”

The moment he looked at her face and saw tears rolling down her eyes, he froze to the spot and his mind ceased working for a while.

While this complicated talk was going on between these two, on the other side, several passers-by, as well as the Security guard of the neighbourhood gate were constantly watching these two young people, with a very strange look. Especially that young security guard, who just had arrived here this month, at his post, but he could still recognise this young man, Ye Feng quite well.

Moreover, the gossiping of this nearby neighbourhood was extremely fierce and powerful, like Su Sheng Group’s mishap, Su Menghan and Su Xinchang severing their relationship, school’s beauty staying at the house of a young man next door, and stuff like this had already spread like fire in the jungle.

But now, the most interesting point was this young guy actually had one more beautiful girl other than Su Menghan, and on top of that, she was currently dragging him forcefully, but then how could he make her cry like this? Really such a beautiful young romantic couple was making nearby people quite envious!

In spite of watching TV, that young security guard was constantly staring outside, at these two people, and thought that this girl on the roadside was prettier than any other TV star with excessive make-up.

Moreover, her stature was also extremely noticeable; overall she was an exquisite beauty, who knew how did this young man hook up with this exquisite beauty?

However, Ye Feng certainly had no free time to give a damn to what others were thinking about them.

At the moment, he was intertwined with his own thought, how could she be so sure that he was “Mo Jiuge”? Was it really because of his smell? Strange, his body shouldn’t have any peculiar smell, right?

“Don’t deny it.”

Seeing his reaction, finally she had completely determined his identity, immediately she threw herself into his bosom, and stretched out her arms to wrap him tightly, and then buried her pretty face in his chest: “This time I sneaked down the mountain, just because I wanted to look for you if you hold anything against me, hate me, dislike me, or ignoring me, then just say so frankly, okay? I won’t bother you then ”

Dislike, hate, she said these words, naturally these words came out of her mouth from the experience of her own life.

Her father had killed his father!

When Ye Feng and Long Wan’er were small, since then it was destined to have a gap between them. She thought that even though they had such an accident in the ancient tomb, still making Ye Feng to accept her was also an extremely difficult matter.

In case he really didn't want her, then she wouldn't have any other option left, than to.....

“Don't be silly.”

Ye Feng sighed.

He could easily feel her grief and pain, if he didn't acknowledge it, or even if he acknowledged it but refused to accept her, then probably this girl would try to find a place to commit suicide. She already had left the house and secretly run away from her house, moreover, Ye Feng had already clearly seen the attitude of her father towards her.

“But if I admit this, wouldn't it instantly bring the truth in front of her, that I practice Cultivation?”

While he was busy considering this matter that could it be possible to be convinced by this girl, but before he could draw any outcome, suddenly a gust of strong wind passed through them from behind!

“What are you doing?”

Suddenly, an old hoarse voice mixed with anger spread into the ears of those two, and then immediately Long Wan'er disappeared from his arms, right in front of his eyes!

A bit startled, he raised his head and surprisingly saw his grandfather

Ye Wentian, who appeared as a tornado, and captured Long Wan'er to one side.

Not good, how did this old man arrive here?

Chapter 092: Dare To Love, Dare To Hate

All of a sudden Ye Wentian appeared out of nowhere, and like a gust of wind passed through them and suddenly grabbed Long Wan'er and pulled her away from Ye Feng's body, and in a flash, very swiftly he moved ahead around five meters away from him, and then stopped.

“Miss Long, being too close to my grandson like this, it's not at all appropriate, right?”

He said that lightly while shifting his gaze towards her.

If she had encountered Ye Wentian earlier, then without a doubt, she would have definitely felt somewhat diffident and fear, after all, he was the old personal enemy of her clan. However now, she was actually not the slightest bit afraid of him, because when she secretly ran away from her house, and descended the mountain, just because she wanted to look for Ye Feng, since then she had already disregarded everything.

She snorted lightly: “Don't you want to ask your treasured baby grandson that what he has done to me?”

After saying that, she raised her pretty face, and took a quick glance of Ye Feng. Her eyes were brimmed with a complex look.

“Huh?”

Her words left Ye Wentian totally flabbergasted.

Ye Feng looked towards her, while thinking that he didn't even know whether Long Wan'er had spread the news of him defeating the perverted man, Li Hua of Heavenly Sword Palace, everywhere or not. Most probably, Li Hua would be occupied with his broken arm nowadays. Moreover, people of Long Clan wouldn't publicise this matter everywhere.

Ye Feng's mind started thinking about the possibilities, at present his grandfather had arrived here, and complicated this matter even more. In case Long Mo'ran also came over here, then he would candidly admit his defeat.

Therefore, he quickly came up with a decision, anyhow, he could never let his grandfather harm her, not even a hair's breadth of her!

Since she possessed the body of immortal arteries, which was extremely important to him. He thought that if she were not the daughter of Long Mo'ran, then wouldn't it be so good for him? Unfortunately, he could just think about it, it could never become a reality.

He raised his head and directed his gaze towards her.

Coincidentally, exactly at the same time, she also happened to turn around and look at him, and their eyes met as they were standing face to face.

“Could it be that you

All of a sudden, Ye Wentian turned a bit quirky, and guessed a certain possibility, and to confirm that, he turned his eyes towards Ye Feng and closely examined his facial expression, then after he sharply looked at Long Wan'er. Watching these two people continuously looking towards each other, and exchanging visions. That sort of vision made him even more determined.

“You guessed right.”

Long Wan'er snorted lightly and said: “What do you want from me? Please feel free and speak out your mind, anyway, I'm not your opponent.”

“You truly deserve to be called as an extremely arrogant woman of Long Clan, even though you are confronting this old man, still how smartly you have maintained such a calm and composed stature.”

Ye Wentian snorted coldly: “I don't care what's going on between you two people right now, hereafter don't you dare think about coming here again, looking for my grandson, as you must be aware of the truth that my Ye Clan and your Long Clan are not on good terms with each other anymore.”

“What If I still choose to look for him? Then?”

She said that while staring at Ye Feng, and couldn't help but think of the scene, in the ancient tomb, under the hazy moonlight.

Immediately after that scene, wearing a mask, he suddenly appeared in

the water to slay the strange fish, he then again saved her life by passing air directly into her mouth, later he stood firmly in front of her, in order to resist Heavenly Sword Tornado, and in return got seriously injured. he saved her life multiple times.

Didn't she know that his wounds hadn't been any better till now?

As she was busy thinking about these things, a pair of her bright piercing eyes automatically drizzled with a layer of mist.

Why the identities of both the parties were so embarrassing for her? In her eyes, the image of the Masked man was gradually overlapping with the image of Ye Feng, making her even more affirm that both were certainly the same person!

However, if this thought of Long Wan'er wouldn't be true, then, in the future, her prime goal would be finding out the Masked man and then killing him! Even if she couldn't succeed in her mission, she would ask the people of her Clan, to search him out from anywhere and kill him!

However, during the last incident, when Ye Feng stood in front of her and resisted with all his might, she had really noticed that he truly tried to withstand all the attacks of that perverted man of 'Heavenly Sword Palace' whose Cultivation was much higher than him. At that moment she had decided that this man was worth entrusting, since then she started admiring him.

Should I love him or hate him?

At present, she was 100 % confirmed that Ye Feng was definitely the Masked man, and she was unlikely to change her feelings for him. She loved him, so what was wrong in it?

Even if Ye Wentian would kill her now, she would die happily, without any complaints and regrets!

Ye Wentian snorted loudly: “If you keep on insisting like this, then I won’t let this young lady off-”

Shua!

Right at this moment, Ye Feng suddenly moved, leaving behind a faint afterimage in-situ, instantly rushed towards her, grabbed her by her waist, and immediately moved far away from his grandfather.

Without any prior warning, he promptly cast out Immortal Technique ‘Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’!

“You smelly brat, how could you dare snatch her away from the grip of this old man?”

Suddenly he became very furious, since he never had expected that a kid like Ye Feng would snatch someone away under his eyelids. When he turned his head then saw Ye Feng, holding Long wan’er in his bosom, had drifted far away from him!

“Grandpa, it seems like recently there has been a thief in the villa, why don’t you go back and see, whether anything is missing in the villa. By

then, I'll talk to her, and will be back soon!"

As soon as Ye Feng said that, he quickly grabbed her, and with a lightning speed, went far away from him.

All of a sudden Ye Wentian's facial expression changed, was there a thief in the villa?

"Brat, just you come back home, then be prepared to learn a good lesson from me."

He didn't dare to ignore this matter, the things preserved in the rooms of this villa, were really very important. Old man stamped his foot bitterly, then by taking small footsteps, he ran toward Qingfeng Park, all prepared to return to the villa and examine it thoroughly.

.....

From very far away, Ye Feng turned back and saw that his grandfather was not chasing after him, hence he took a breath of relief. Fortunately, he had guessed right, as there were several rooms in the villa, but nobody was allowed to enter them, which explained everything, there must be really something precious hidden inside them.

However, he didn't want to be careless and take a risk, therefore, wrapping his arms closely around her, he ran straight several km away, almost close to the bar street, and then stopped there, and loosened his arms from around her soft tender body.

“I already knew that it was you.”

Right after seeing Ye Feng’s agility, would she still need more time to figure out that he was that Masked man “Mo Jiuge”? Excitedly, she already had stretched out her hands and circled them around his neck, firmly refused to let him go, while an expression of overflowing happiness quickly appeared on her pretty face, making her more beautiful.

“Yes, it’s me.”

Ye Feng nodded. Just now, when he saw that even though she encountered such a powerful opponent Ye Wentian, still she kept on insisting on this point, without turning a hair, then finally he gave up and decided that he should no longer hide this truth from her.

“Then what are you going to do?”

She raised her head and somewhat anxiously, looked at him.

She never had expected that she would find the right man so quickly, moreover, she had also never thought that Ye Feng would actually be that Masked man. During the incident which happened in front of the hospital, she had detected that there was no existence of Cultivation in him, and he was just a completely ordinary person!

If she hadn’t felt that Ye Feng seemed a bit familiar, then, she absolutely would not have doubted his smell, she would have never guessed that both parties would be the same person.

“You are my woman, nobody can dare to take you away from me.”

Still holding her in his bosom, Ye Feng continued saying somewhat regretfully: “Actually, earlier I thought, when you would find me, you would certainly kill me

“Originally I wanted to kill you, but now I like you very much.”

She said somewhat smartly: “But if I start hating you again, I will definitely kill you without any further delay.”

“I won’t give you the opportunity to hate me.”

Ye Feng smilingly said that.

“Then what about you, don’t you hate me?”

Although she somewhat hesitated, but finally asked out directly.

Ye Feng knew that the things she said just now, was related to her status, he shook his head and said:. “I’ll ask you just one question, if some day, I kill your father, then won’t you hate me for that?”

In the eyes of other people, such words were entirely whimsical, a youngster who had just a few years of Cultivation, was thinking about killing the genius and most talented person of Long Clan, Long Mo’ran, could it be ever possible?

But she had already seen his strength numerous times, and also clearly knew that he wasn't joking at all!

Just by relying on the strength of his five-year of Cultivation, Ye Feng already had beheaded and killed Hai Tang, of 'Happily married pair of swords', the story not ended here, he also had cast out Sword qi, making Li Hua run away cowardly from the battlefield, after losing one of his arms. Although he was nothing before them, but still he defeated them. Over time, there was a high possibility, that he could easily kill his father, Long Mo'ran, whose name was more than enough, to tremble the whole martial arts circles, like a fallen leaf.

"Such a faraway affair which isn't going to happen soon, actually I don't want to think about it currently."

She inclined her head towards one side, and with a sigh, said: "If really there would be such a day, then I will not prevent you from taking revenge, Long Mo'ran has been very cold and indifferent throughout his life, not even that, he even has killed his wife by his own hands If possible, I would rather not have him ... as my father. "

Chapter 093: Fairy Of The East China Sea

In the shadow of the streetlight, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were quietly embracing each other, like a pair of young lovers. However, nobody knew how complex their situation was.

Fortunately, while keeping everything aside, they decided not to talk. Therefore, at present, their thoughts were very simple and pure.

“So, are you going back first? Otherwise your grandfather

Long Wan'er was a bit anxious for him, therefore she didn't dare to stay any longer.

“Hmmm, anyway, you must be careful, don't run around like that again.”

Ye Feng hesitated a bit, but then warned her : “Even if your Cultivation promotes a bit slowly, but you must ensure your security first, ok?”

If she again ran into that perverted evil man of ‘Happily married pair of swords’, and if at that time, Ye Feng was not around her, then, it would become very difficult for her to escape from him, or to chase him down. In that situation, a tragedy might happen which would leave him with regret throughout his life.

He was just waiting for the right opportunity to show up, then he could easily help her in ‘Open Hole’ process, and with the help of her body of

immortal arteries, her Cultivation could also rise straight up to the clear sky. At present, her inner qi was also totally insignificant.

As for now, he still didn't dare to rest assured and expose his secret of being an Immortal to her. This was what his master, Su Feiying, had taught him since his childhood, that no matter what happens, always keep a watchful eye, and always leave an escape route for oneself. In fact, it is actually a bitter fact.

“I'll return home

She could easily feel that Ye Feng was being over concerned about her, hence she nodded, however, suddenly she asked: “By the way, just recently, what was going on in your family villa? That girl

As these words fell from her mouth, Ye Feng's heart skipped a beat, as he expected, this young girl really mentioned Su Menghan's name.

Since she mentioned it, now he couldn't play dumb, hence said: “She is one of my classmates, because of some family issues, temporarily she is living in my

“No need to explain.”

A trace of hidden bitterness suddenly flashed through her beautiful eyes, she pursed up her lips gently, stood on the tip of her toes, and gently kissed him on his face: “Besides this, I also know that your engagement has already been fixed with the eldest daughter of Yanjing's Lin Clan”

After saying that, she sarcastically and very smartly smiled and said :
“However, I don’t care anymore. When I won’t be around you, then you can let them accompany you. Of course, if someday I feel that you don’t want me, then you.....”

“Rest assured, I won’t.”

Ye Feng felt a bit helpless.

Only Long Wan’er had the body of immortal arteries, therefore it was impossible for Ye Feng to abandon her. However, the surprising point was that she neither cared about Su Menghan nor Lin Shiqing, which truly startled him. If because of certain mishap, Long Wan’er got swapped with Su Menghan, then in that condition, Ye Feng was 100 % sure Long Wan’er would definitely become crazily jealous.

Hearing him pledging that he would never leave her side, she felt relieved and became a bit happy, gradually a smile appeared across her face. Afterwards, she turned around and started walking to finally depart. Although she was moving ahead, but somewhat reluctantly, and really hated this particular time, where she had to part with him.

However, suddenly a thought pierced through her mind, hence she immediately stopped and turned back, tilted her head and asked: “Can you tell me, why did you go to that ancient tomb.”

“To look for a person.”

Ye Feng said that frankly since he decided not to conceal this from her.

“Looking for someone? A man or a woman?”

She turned a bit nervous all of a sudden after hearing his words.

“A woman.”

Ye Feng sighed as he continued: “She is my master, but I haven’t seen her for quite a long time, someone took her photos when she was in that tomb. Therefore, I went over there, to have a look around

Just by mentioning that he had a master, it wouldn’t expose the existence of the World of the Immortals.

“Is she pretty?”

She asked.

“Yes, she is.”

Ye Feng nodded.

“She has very long hair? And she is a woman with cold temperament?”

She asked again.

He felt a bit strange, and replied: “Yes, but how do you know?”

She knitted her dense and black eyebrows and said: “It’s strange, but it seems like she is the same person as the rumour claims about the fairy of the East China Sea ”

“Fairy of the East China Sea?”

As soon as he heard that, it immediately piqued his interest.

“Ah, a lot of rumours have spread recently in the Martial arts world, regarding a woman who has appeared near the East China Sea, and she is called fairy. She has a very cold temperament and has already attracted the attention of lots of people of the martial arts world. Therefore, many people want to go and take a look at such an exquisite beauty. It is said that she is extremely beautiful, has long hair hanging down to her buttocks, and has always been very cold and indifferent.”

Whatever rumours she had heard so far, she vomited it out in front of him.

“Well, it’s likely to be her.”

Once again his interest crossed all limits and he turned super excited. Suddenly he thought of the last time, in the ancient tomb, where he completely failed to find any trace of Su Feiying. Therefore, now, he got some news of her quite soon.

“So, Fairy of the East China Sea?”

If it was really Su Feiying, then what would be she doing there? First, she was seen in the Changbai Mountains ancient tomb, and then in the East China Sea

Ye Feng shook his head, as he had never ever correctly guessed his master's thoughts.

“So now Do you want to go to the East China Sea?”

Somewhat anxiously, she asked that.

“Ah, I won't since I have something important to take care of, you just pay attention to your safety.”

Ye Feng nodded his head, and thanked her from the bottom of his heart, for bringing this message.

“Alright then, I'm leaving.”

Long Wan'er appeared to stay behind but had nothing to say. She finally turned around and proceeded to leave, but only after stopping and turning once to stare deeply at him.

In fact, she had a lot to ask, such as, how did he conceal his Cultivation, and so on, however, she didn't ask anything. After all, everyone has one's own secret, in her heart, she similarly had a secret

which she didn't share with him

Just before she left, Ye Feng saw a wide spectrum of emotions in her eyes and he knew that he wouldn't be witnessing such a thing ever again.

“Master, I'll go right away to look for you!”

Ye Feng raised his head, looked towards the moonlight sky, and saw there was not a single star in the sky, which once again reminded him, that this place was not his former place the World of the Immortals.

In the World of the Immortals, regardless of wherever you go, the night sky uses to have innumerable stars all over the sky. How could this sky be so spacious and empty like this?

Of course, before going to the East China Sea, he must go back to his villa first, otherwise, his grandfather would burst out, and he would be forced to run away, to the ends of the earth to withstand it.

.....

When Long Wan'er turned around and departed from Ye Feng, she directly went towards Yanjing railway station.

To cover a long distance, naturally, the people of Martial arts world also used to take the train. When she arrived at the railway station, just wanted to find a place to stay today and buy a ticket tomorrow, but suddenly she noticed two familiar figures appeared outside the station.

Long Qing! Long Zi!

Those two were her uncles, now each of them had 30 years of Cultivation. Plus, they had already perfected the Long Clan's original techniques like – Dragon leg technique, Romantic sword technique and Noble palm technique!

“Dad sent them here to look for me?”

She thought, anyways they were her own people. Moreover, she must go back quickly, she didn't need to be afraid of the opposite party.

Hence she moved a few steps forward, and appeared before them: “Uncle Qing, Uncle Zi, how did you come?”

“Wan'er!”

Among them, one man who was called Long Qing, was clad in a green-coloured gown. He hastily came forward and looked her from top to bottom, and when he noticed that nothing was strange about her, then finally felt relieved.

“Wan'er, how can you silently run away like this?”

Long Zi appeared quite earnest, by holding a serious-looking face, he said: “Head of the Clan is very angry. This time, does your sister-in-law help you run away? Do you know that this will implicate her?”

“Hmmm.....”

She admitted her mistake, but she became quite gloomy and disturbed. Of course, she could escape because of the help of her sister-in-law, Shu Shu. However, if Long Mo’ran would know about it, he would definitely give severe punishment to both of them! Fortunately, Long Clan’s people generally didn’t let his kind of news pass up to him, after all, everyone was familiar with his temperament. For a little mistake, he might punish someone to his death.

“I want to see Dad, Uncle Qing, Uncle Zi, let’s go back home.”

She didn’t think much, just simply said that to them.

“Yes, it’s really important to return, however, you won’t see the Head of the clan.”

Long Zi said: “When we set off to look for you, afterwards the Head of the clan proceeded towards the East China Sea. He wants to find that rumoured woman, the fairy of the East China Sea, as you know that he didn’t remarry for so many years, if this time, he could find a beautiful woman, that would be really good

She remained stunned for a moment hearing that.

Her father went to the East China Sea to look for that fairy, so as to ask her to be his wife?

Wasn't she Ye Feng's master?

Chapter 094: Well Done!

Ye Feng returned to 'Qingfeng Park' with a pretty good mood because at last, he had resolved one of his big concerns.

The matter of Long Wan'er needed to be handled on an urgent basis, although their union was still far away in the future, but at least now they knew each other's feelings.

Lights inside the villa were brightly lit, Ye Feng pushed the door and enter the room, and surprisingly saw in the hall, Ye Wentian was sitting on the sofa, drinking tea, as well as heard some strange sounds transmitting from the kitchen.

"Keke, Grandpa."

He ran thirty-two steps to the side of his grandfather, sat down and looked towards the kitchen: "Is Menghan inside?"

"Hmmm, I'm hungry, so that young girl is making something for me. How did your discussion go with Miss Long?"

Ye Wentian was not angry, instead, there was a beaming expression on his face. While talking he gently put down the cup.

"Don't ask me about the discussion Aren't you angry?"

Ye Feng was somewhat baffled, just recently this old man wanted to strangle him to death, but now how was there such a big smile on his face?

“Am I looking angry?”

Ye Wentian suddenly lowered his voice: “Brat, well done! You even succeeded in establishing such a good relationship with Miss Long! If Long Mo’ran would come to know about it, his heart certainly would wish to die, ha ha ha!”

When Ye Feng listened to him, he remained thunderstruck, he didn’t understand how to react now, what to choose between laughter and tears.

Indeed, he took hold of the daughter of the old personal enemy of his clan, therefore, why wouldn’t this old man be in such a very cheerful mood? However, not to mention, if this thing would come in the knowledge of Long Mo’ran, certainly he wouldn’t feel well, and the unhappiness of this old man’s enemy wouldn’t clearly result in his happiness?

“Okay, get down to the business.”

Ye Wentian turned a bit serious and said : “The matter that you can practice, does that girl of Long Clan know about it?”

“Yes.”

Ye Feng nodded, “But I still believe her.”

Ye Wentian listened to him, but didn't oppose, instead he agreed with his way: “Pretty good, that girl of Long Clan was a very determined person, with a very crabby temperament, if she recognises this matter, not to mention her father Long Mo'ran, not even her ancestors can succeed in changing her irreversible determination.”

Obviously, the illustrious reputation of Long Wan'er had even left Ye Wentian with the words of appreciation for her.

If she fell in love with Ye Feng, then it would absolutely not harm his interest in this matter. If not, then by her temperament, just after meeting with Ye Feng, she would have started to do everything possible thing to kill him.

“However, let this old man remind you of a little thing.”

A dignified expression gradually took birth on Ye Wentian's face : “About that Long Clan's girl, you can only be tempted, can't get emotionally attached, got my point?”

Ye Feng frowned, as he didn't understand what he really meant.

“Stupid kid. What I meant is, you can have fun with her, but can't develop feelings for her, can't get sentimentally attached to her. Must know that your father was killed by the hands of Long Mo'ran, don't ever forget this, keep it alive in your mind!”

By holding a firm and serious looking expression, the Old man again warned him : “Since now you have started practicing, don’t forget to pay a visit and say thanks to the great sage master Gao Renwei. If this matter will be handled carefully, our Ye Clan still has the hope of staging a comeback.”

“.....”

These words of the old man left Ye Feng somewhat speechless, the point was, he was not with Long Wan’er just to have some fun, otherwise what would be the difference left between him and his own dead father?

Ye Yunfei played with the feelings of several people everywhere and forced several men to put on a green hat. Because of this character of his father, he later led to the destruction of his own Clan.

Ye Feng didn’t want to repeat the same mistake by following his father’s same disastrous policy.

Now, he finally understood why his father had turned into the playboy, and thus brought about the destruction of Ye Clan. Since there was this kind of old man, who had no respect for people, what kind of education he could give to his own son, wasn’t it obvious now?

Of course, Ye Feng was unlikely to contradict his grandfather and argue with him now on this point, as he knew that a debate with this old man would never have any effect, so there was no need to waste any more words on this topic.

Neither it was important for Ye Feng, nor he was even the least bit interested in helping Ye Clan, in its sudden re-emergence. Even if he couldn't go back to the World of the Immortals, then the only thing he would like to do in his lifetime, was to protect those people around him, who were very precious to him, that was all.

Besides, there were lots of people, who were completely unable to accomplish this matter including Ye Wentian, Long Mo'ran, and so on. Like them, even if he could do something to bring his Clan back to the life, but again how?

The desire to protect important people around him, that must be based on the pursuit of absolute power as the goal, like the Cultivation similar to the World of the Immortals.

Really, strength is the fundamental thing!

Ye Feng finally comprehended the words of this sentence very clearly, much more profound than the average person.

In the World of the Immortals, if the father of Mo Jiuge were not so formidable, how could he dare to force Su Feiying to get engaged with Mo Jiuge? Most importantly, that guy Mo Jiuge was extremely ugly, and was renowned everywhere for this, also this lecherous wretched guy was totally dependent on his father's forces and influence, and by using that authority he used to scourge and destroy the life of several beautiful Immortal women everywhere.

Such an ugly guy like Mo Jiuge with an exquisite beauty Su Feiying, together they were really completely two extremes! However, because of

the power of the strength, Su Feiying had no other option left but to submit to Mo Clan, and was forced to get engaged with an ugly looking, weak and lecherous playboy, Mo Jiuge.

Because of a strange combination of circumstances, could she really come accidentally to the Earth, from a certain level? And on top of that, still to have Su Feiying together with Ye Feng, was really a good thing.

Seeing Ye Feng in a silent state, Ye Wentian didn't say anything more, just pondered about the same, and then slowly said: " Oh, that's right, since you came back, you are not allowed to leave Yanjing for the next two weeks, until the College entrance exam ends, till then I will take a good look at you."

Ye Feng heard that and was left bewildered.

He just thought to embark tomorrow to the East China Sea, in order to look for Su Feiying, but just now, by any chance did this old man just make him not probably leave Yanjing unexpectedly for half a month? If he would until the end of the college entrance examination, perhaps by then she might have changed the place!

"Although I have plenty of ways to get you into the Yanjing University, but if your score would be extremely low, then that would be incredibly shameful for me, the elder of Ye Clan"

Ye Wentian coughed, and continued : "Just recently, I had informed Lin's old man, to let his granddaughter meet with you tomorrow."

“What?”

This news gave him a powerful jolt, he was not at all unhappy : “Didn’t you say earlier once you pass the university exam and get admission in Yanjing University?”

“Now this news has become a big uproar throughout Yanjing, we failed to conceal the truth, and now there isn’t need to conceal the truth anymore.”

The old man frowned : “Get prepared for this, make a good impression on others, if others can’t have a liking for you, then this old man will cut off your flesh alive as punishment.”

“.....”

This left Ye Feng totally speechless, but was actually thinking in the heart, just wait to see what kind of beauty this Lin Shiqing was, till then he would absolutely not speak a single word.

He had promised Su Menghan before, that he would certainly achieve, otherwise, what kind of man he would be regarded then?

Quite soon Su Menghan, holding a bowl of noodles in her hands, came out to serve it to Ye Wentian.

“Ye Feng, you came back

She was a bit cautious, after placing the bowl of noodles on the table, she arrived at the side of Ye Feng.

Just an old man, out of the blue, crashed in the villa and started rummaging through chests and cupboards, making her have a scare, soon after she came to know that he was Ye Feng's grandfather, which immediately little bit scared her.

She knew that Ye Feng's grandfather was friends with Lin's old man, moreover it seemed like Ye Feng's engagement with Lin Shiqing had already been laid down by this two old man. As a result, Ye Feng's grandfather would certainly not like her, right?

However, to one's surprise, when he saw her inside the villa, he didn't say anything, rather he kept on rummaging around everywhere for a while, perhaps he wanted to confirm that whether anything had not been stolen or not. After confirming that, he felt relaxed, and then said only one sentence "I'm hungry".

No doubt, Su Menghan had also an exquisite mind, she immediately ran to go to the kitchen, to make for him boiled noodles.

"Ok."

Ye Feng gave a smile to that Xiaohua, then took her hand and drag her to sit next to him, and at last comforted her.

Looking at the voraciously devouring Ye Wentian, he asked: "Well, what important things have been hidden in the other places of this

villa?”

Ye Wentian put down the bowl, his facial expression looked serious :
“Want to know? Wait till I finish eating, then come along with me.”

Chapter 095: Ye Clan's Martial Arts

Regarding something hidden in the villa, Ye Feng had always been very curious to know about it since the beginning of his arrival in this world.

After finished eating a bowl full of noodles, Ye Wentian stood up and walked toward the bathroom, upstairs.

“The little girl can also come along, but must remember these are our Ye Clan's things, must not be told outside, got it?”

Since Ye Wentian greeted Su Menghan, which really left Ye Feng and Su Menghan somewhat overjoyed.

Just now whatever this Old man said, did that mean Su Menghan was also considered as one of the members of Ye Clan? Did that also mean he gave recognition to her relationship with Ye Feng? However, what about the matter regarding Ye Feng's engagement with Miss Lin?

However, Su Menghan didn't want to think much, she was already very delighted seeing that Ye Feng's grandfather had already acknowledged her.

Originally, she was in a state of homelessness, although she lived in Ye Feng's villa, but since the beginning, she never had that sort of feeling of being a family. For her, it was more like living under another person's roof, and this feeling often made her suffocate.

But now, after hearing these words of Ye Wentian, she immediately dispelled all of her other concerns.

Secretly she glanced at Ye Feng and blushed a little.

Our Ye Clan

Ye Feng scratched his head and pulled her to keep up with the pace of his grandfather.

As far as Ye Wentian's thoughts were concerned, Ye Feng could correctly guess now one or two of them. Since his grandfather truly wanted to carry forward his Clan and bring it back into existence again, in that case, merely depending on a single person, 'Ye Feng' would definitely be a wrong idea.

Just now, Ye Wentian said that in favour of Su Menghan, just because he wanted to win over her heart. Certainly, Ye Feng would never believe that this old man would not have done a thorough investigation of Su Menghan before meeting her. Definitely by now, he would have been completely familiar with her present situation.

Perhaps, this thought was saved in Ye Wentian's heart, with this intention that in future he might ask Ye Feng to keep several wives, who could give birth to several children. This would really support Ye Clan, and would help it in its quick prosperity

This certainly was not a misdemeanour for Ye Feng, from any angle.

Although the secular law proclaims the common custom of monogamy, but in the martial arts world, some matters often take place which are completely beyond the common customs. For instance – Twenty years ago, Ye Clan's complete destruction, or ten years ago, Scar suffered a huge tragedy, and even the recent example of Changbai Mountain, where so many people died. About all these matters, can the law govern them?

Most of the things of this country still rely on some commonly established customs.

However, if Ye Feng would be extremely powerful, and would really keep several wives, then in that situation, nobody in this entire country could dare to say anything to him.

Anyway, these three people went upstairs, there Ye Wentian punched and opened the bathroom's door, and went inside. The entire scene of the bathroom quickly caught the eyes of those two people. There were two densely packed rows of bookshelves, laden with heavy books, and were awfully covered in dust.

It could be clearly noticed, that not long ago this place had been flipped through thoroughly. Certainly after hearing those words of Ye Feng, the Old man couldn't help but get scared, and quickly came back to the villa, to examine everything carefully, just as to ensure that whether he really had lost something

Ye Feng casually looked over those bookshelves which were entirely piled up with several books covered with dust, and noticed that some of them were just ordinary books. Although he quickly understood how the way his grandfather used to think, certainly there must be some quite precious thing mixed up with these ordinary books, for example – Rare

Books of Martial arts.

From the pile of books, Ye Wentian quickly picked out a book with a very simple cover. By taking a quick look of it, it looked like it was an ancient book with wire binding, and on the cover of which four characters were written “Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique.”

“This is the foundation of our Ye Clan, the Primary-level Internal Core Technique ‘Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique.’”

Ye Wentian sighed : “Now in this world, this Primary-level Internal Core Technique is spread all over, however, the practice speed doesn’t have any difference. It is said that formerly, there was the intermediate-level Internal Core Technique, the practice speed of which was twice faster than the average man. And when it comes to the high-level Internal Core Technique, its speed was several times quicker than”

It doubles the speed of practice, that means by practising Core Technique, every year one can promote one’s Cultivation up to two years! This Core Technique can multiple the practising speed several times, isn’t it incredible. If someone practices for ten years, he can easily attain a hundred years of cultivation.

If coupled with a Immortals’ land, then practice speed would be similar to a rocket ride, which would directly move in the upward direction.

Ye Feng listened to that and nodded his head while thinking that this technique was almost similar to ‘Immortal Core Technique’ of the World of the Immortals.

When Ye Feng and his master Su Feiying were in Star Tomb School, there was the existence of only Primary-level ‘Immortal Core Technique’. However, Mo Jiuge belonged to Nanling, since Mo Clan had the greatest power in the range, and the fundamental reason was because Mo Clan used to practice Intermediate-level Immortal Core Technique, the practice speed of which was twice faster than the ordinary person!

“Ye Feng, since you have already been practising Core Technique of the great sage master Gao Renwei, this Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique is completely useless and irrelevant for you then.”

The Old man said, while holding the book of Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique in his hands, as if he was holding a candy to tempt Su Menghan : “Little girl, I see you are shocked to your bones.....”

“Keke Grandpa, she has also been practising Core Technique of my master’s school, therefore, she also doesn’t have access to that ‘Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique’.

Ye Feng immediately coughed, and said that, as to remind him.

“What?”

The Old man frowned, quickly withdrew that Rare book, stretched out his hand and grabbed Su Menghan’s wrist, and felt it for a moment.

Indeed, a surge of somewhat strange force was running inside her body, very obviously it was the sign that she had already started practising. Although the force was somewhat strange, and her inner qi didn’t seem

to be the same, but Ye Wentian still didn't care.

In this world of the martial arts, there was the existence of various Core Techniques, though they were out of practice, but there were different attributes of them, hence feeling a bit difference was also normal.

“Ok, Ok, I'll just keep this book of Ye Clan's Flying Core Technique here, in the future will talk about it again.”

Ye Wentian shook his head, and placed the Rare Book in the corner of a pile of books. And then along with those two people, he left that bathroom of the second floor.

Afterwards, they came to the bedroom of Ye Feng, or it could be said that it was now Su Menghan's bedroom. Originally, the opposite of which had one more bedroom, but now the entire room was covered with dust, a huge pile of old books like a garbage heap was scattered everywhere. It seemed like someone was too lazy and disinclined to even put them on the shelves.

Therein, the Old man had left something earlier, now he wanted to take a look and search for that right thing. Quite soon, he found out an ancient book list, and then laughed.

“Ha ha ha. Although you can't use Ye Clan's Flying Core Technique, but I have a very broad and profound knowledge of Ye Clan's one Martial arts technique. This technique is called 'Dragon Claw Hand Technique' which stems from a martial arts school, however, my grandfather had changed the inner qi's operation line, making it even more powerful than before. ”

After saying that, the Old man smiled and threw that ancient book list towards Ye Feng.

Ye Feng quickly put out his hand and caught it, afterwards opened it to take a look of it, Dragon Claw Hand Technique?

In the Immortals' World, he had practised several Immortal Techniques, but had never seen such sort of martial arts technique. It was almost similar to his Bagua boxing, a kind of Chinese boxing, however, it had very little value there in the Immortals' World.

While on the other hand, Su Menghan seemed like she was watching the strangest thing of the world.

Although she had already started Immortal Cultivation, but actually, she still didn't know a thing about practising. Earlier she hadn't expected that Ye Feng's Clan would be one the aristocratic Clans of the martial arts world. Even more than that, unexpectedly it also possessed the legendary Martial arts Rare Book in fable.

“Menghan, hold it.”

Quite soon Ye Feng took a thorough look of that Dragon Claw Hand Technique, and then handed it over to Su Menghan.

Then after, very rapidly he took a step to cast out Dragon Claw Hand Technique by using a hand gesture. All of a sudden his whole body's vehemence came out, which even startled nearby standing Ye Wentian and his facial expression immediately changed.

What did he think he was doing? Just by reading it once, did he want to cast it out proficiently? Kidding, how could he do that so quickly?

But soon, Ye Wentian's expression changed from suspicion to surprise, and then turned into joy!

“Come on!”

Ye Feng eyes were swift and fierce, he looked up to see his grandfather, simultaneously moved again and quickly displayed Dragon Claw Hand Technique one more time, and gave a hearsay evidence!

Chapter 096: Martial Arts Genius

Ye Feng's stature flashed, immediately a sudden gust of wind rushed towards Ye Wentian, gently caressing his face, it passed through lightly touching his robe's sleeve. According to the ancient chart, Zhenqi really circulated within his body with a very rapid movement.

Ye Wentian's Cultivation quickly sensed his formidable power!

Snapped! Snapped!

After two back to back sounds, Ye Wentian conveniently displayed another move of Dragon Claw Hand Technique, so as to withstand the aggressive attack of Ye Feng. However, his facial expression was still dignified.

With just five years of Cultivation, Ye Feng displayed such a powerful move a moment ago, which had actually reached more than a decade! It was such a situation where Ye Feng took a quick look of the ancient chart, just once, and then tried to cast out this technique. If he would really practice it diligently, wouldn't it become even more powerful?

This suddenly stirred up the emotions of Ye Wentian and he became very excited, heavenly unceasing Ye Clan!

How he hadn't thought that his own grandson unexpectedly turned out to be a Martial Arts genius, who learned such a complicated Dragon Claw Hand Technique very quickly, in just a single study!

As everyone knew, for Ye Feng, even a highly complicated Immortal Technique was also nothing, he could very easily comprehend it as well, let alone this Martial arts technique. However, in the process of displaying Dragon Claw Hand Technique, he also sensed a trace of an exquisite place, which he had never felt earlier while practising several Immortal techniques.

Dragon Claw Hand Technique had altogether ten different moves, and surprisingly just a moment ago Ye Feng had already finished browsing through all of these moves, in just one blow.

“After this fight, I can use this set of moves, which can be considered as much stronger than Bagua Boxing.”

Ye Feng could obviously feel that while dealing with the people, Dragon Claw Hand was much easier to control the strength than Bagua Boxing. Moreover, this technique was exquisite and its highest quality was, it was really flawless.

Unlike Bagua Boxing which generally had lots of loopholes from head to toe while displaying it, this technique was completely flawless. Moreover, using Dragon Claw Hand would make him appear more like one of the martial artists of this world, then nobody would be able to doubt him being an Immortal Cultivator.

“Pretty good, little brat, you have very much potential.”

Ye Wentian was extremely satisfied with him, as if he seemed to see a rising star of the Martial arts world.

In the Martial arts world, practising moves were also divided into several levels, the highly talented person could practice moves of higher levels. For instance – Ye Wentian could only practice to the second level of this move Dragon Claw Hand. However, as compared with the power of the first level, his might was already twice powerful.

It could be said that on the basis of Ye Feng's talent, if he could practice Dragon Claw Hand to the third level, and when he would have 20 years of Cultivation, during that time, in addition to Ye Wentian, who else in this world could dare to be his rival?

Then, dealing with a sharp weapon empty-handed wouldn't be a problem at all!

On the second level of Dragon Claw Hand, the practitioner could directly suck in the target to his side, to the extent of assigning away the inner qi as well.

About the third level, what kind of terrible effect would it have? Regarding that, Ye Wentian didn't have any idea, because, in the past, no one had ever reached the third level.

Now Ye Feng was his only hope.

“Little girl, what do you think about it?”

After being satisfied with Ye Feng, Ye Wentian turned his gaze towards another side, where Su Menghan was standing, simultaneously reading

the technique, Dragon Claw Hand.

“I am unable to understand anything, it’s really quite complicated.”

Su Menghan was almost about to cry, what was this above drawn picture all about? Did we have meridians kind of thing within our body? She didn’t understand a thing, not to mention learning Dragon Claw Hand Technique!

“Couldn’t understand? Even most of the girls, who were hit and killed by this technique, were also not good.”

The moment these words fell into Ye Feng’s ears, he immediately rushed over to the side of Su Menghan, and snatched away the ancient chart of Dragon Claw Hand from her hands, and threw it back towards his grandfather.

In his view, this kind of thing, that used to kill people, wasn’t important for Su Menghan to learn. Moreover, she was already learning Immortal Technique with his help, wasn’t that more suitable for her?

Well, now the next person was Long Wan’er who must learn Immortal Techniques. A girl, using Dragon Leg Technique to kick people around, all day long, wasn’t it highly improper? From now on, if she would continue doing such things, then obviously Ye Feng would be extremely worried about her getting exposed any moment, that was too uncomfortable.

“Do you have any other martial arts? Dragon Claw Hand is also pretty

good, very subtle and exquisite.”

Ye Feng asked that as he moved his hands and feet, to make a gesture of that technique.

“Other, even if I have for the time being, but they are the distinctive martial arts of my Ye Clan, we can provide them to those people whom we recognise. He He He, our Ye Clan’s Wild Devil Boxing is a most important in the Martial arts world. So, just wait, when you attain 20 years of Cultivation, then only I’ll teach you. ”

Ye Wentian narrowed his eyes while saying that, accompanied with a smile.

“Don’t teach then, forget about it

Ye Feng was feeling helpless, although he didn’t choose to learn martial arts by his own free will, but he just happened to get in touch with this new type of sophisticated martial arts, and became a bit curious. If the power and usefulness of these techniques were compared with Immortal Techniques, then it seemed like there was a huge difference between them.

“Anyways, you can take it back this ancient chart of Dragon Claw Hand. This is my bedroom, I will tidy up now and sleep.”

Ye Feng looked around the room and said.

“What will you tidy up? You both have gotten room to sleep, that’s

enough! I warn you little brat, don't ever try to mess up things here."

After scolding him, Ye Wentian again hid the ancient chart of Dragon Claw Hand in the ground below the heap of thick books. After that, he clapped his hands to remove dust, and then very swiftly he jumped out of the window and walked away. However, just before leaving, he left behind one sentence :

"Don't forget to go to school tomorrow, also Miss Lin will be waiting for you."

Soon, Ye Wentian's figure completely disappeared before their eyes, leaving behind those two dumbfounded young people.

"Hey."

Su Menghan tugged at the sleeve of Ye Feng: "Are you going tomorrow to see that beautiful woman of Lin Clan?"

"He has forced me to see, rest assured, like I've promised, I won't say a word to her."

Ye Feng smiled.

"In fact, you don't have to."

When she listened to him saying that, she actually became somewhat embarrassed: "Elder has introduced you to meet her, if you won't talk to

her, then that will be very impolite and ill-mannered, I won't blame you."

Ye Feng heard that and became a bit happy, because it seemed like this young girl had started to understand the given situation. Could it be because she had started Immortal Cultivation?

He squeezed her soft cheek, smiled and asked: "Now what do you think about practising"

"Not bad, but what is Immortal Cultivation? Just a moment ago, that Rare Book, I couldn't understand a thing, is Immortal Cultivation also a Rare Book?"

She wrinkled her beautiful nose to make an appearance that she couldn't understand anything.

Ye Feng noticed that this was the only time they could talk about these things, therefore, he chose this time when she had to return to her bedroom, and started telling her about these things. Besides, he also mentioned Su Feiying.

".....In this world, Immortal Cultivators are not in large number, as far as I know there is just me and my master."

Finally, Ye Feng concluded everything and said : "Nowadays my master has appeared near the East China Sea, when the college entrance examination ends, then I will go to look for her."

"Hmmm."

Su Menghan probably knew that why Ye Wentian had prohibited him from leaving Yanjing, otherwise, wasn't it obvious that he would have dashed out to the East China Sea by now?

As far as the college entrance exam was concerned, it seemed like it was truly not that important for an Immortal Cultivator.

When Ye Feng finished talking about these things, Su Menghan's beautiful and attractive face suddenly turned a little red, a pair of her white hands pinched her skirt like a cat on the hot bricks, and then she said nervously : "YouYou tonight"

Seeing her like this, Ye Feng couldn't help but feel a bit funny, this little girl was definitely still thinking about what Ye Wentian said a few minutes back, that two of them should sleep in this room.

"I have some important matter to take care of. You first take rest, ok? Good night."

Ye Feng took her in her arms and got up to leave the room. When she would become a more skilled practitioner, then Ye Feng would take out another Lingshi, which he had accidentally obtained from the ancient tomb of the Changbai Mountain, allowing her to absorb it for the rapid elevation in her Cultivation. This type of privilege was only enjoyed by the disciple of big schools, in the World of the Immortals.

While on the other side, at present in Tianhua Casino, several people had died, the power and influence of Scar were almost completely plundered. It had become almost impossible for Scar to handle this

situation efficiently. In such a critical situation, Ye Feng must go over there to have a look, and help him hurriedly.

“If I had a decade of Cultivation then it would have been great.”

Ye Feng thought.

On reaching ten years of Cultivation, he could easily use the most basic attack of Immortal Techniques ‘Red Flame’. It was used to burn the corpse and then completely destroy it, without leaving any trace. It was quite an appropriate attack.

Helping Scar would be a piece of cake for him, presently his mind was fully occupied by the thought of tomorrow’s meeting. Actually, he was looking forward to tomorrow’s meeting with Miss Lin.

Didn’t matter how, but there was a very good reputation of her outside as if she was Miss Perfect. Even Su Menghan praised her unceasingly. So, it was really impossible for Ye Feng as a man, not to be curious. Also, he didn’t know, if she was compared with his beautiful female master, then would she stand any chance?

Chapter 097: Scar's Determination

Once again Ye Feng arrived at Tianhua Casino. At this time, it was completely surrounded by the several police vehicles from outside. There, Ye Feng saw Northwest Sub-Bureau Chief, that pot-bellied man Li Lihui, in the crowd.

The surrounding people were talking about this matter, that in Tianhua Casino dozen of people were slaughtered. This matter had already become noisily big.

As soon as Ye Feng along with Scar returned here all the way back from the Changbai Mountains, they saw that several guys holding firearms were waiting to kill them. Therefore, very conveniently, Ye Feng finished them up to end this trouble. In addition, he also killed Song Tianying along with his two attendants, by throwing them out of the window. Altogether, he put an end to the lives of seven or eight people, in a flash.

Such a big thing happened, Li Liu didn't arrive here personally, he didn't have such an authority.

"..... I just came back, how can I have any idea? What do you expect from me? For this matter, you should try to look for Song Hu."

Scar was giving an explanation to Li Lihui.

"This matter must be investigated in detail, just wait for the forensic results."

The Pot-bellied man, Li Lihui was assigned here at the crime scene. At present, he was holding an appearance as if he was being conscientious in discharging official duties. When he saw Ye Feng coming over there, his eyes flashed brightly and hurriedly he ran up to him, while putting on a smile : “Ye Shao, what brought you here? In this kind of troublesome matter, Ye Shao mustn’t get involved

No one would dare testify Ye Feng, therefore, Li Lihui didn’t know that Ye Feng was also involved in this matter.

“Regarding other people, they don’t matter to me, but Scar accompanied me on a trip, and we used Hummer for this trip.”

Ye Feng pointed to the side of nearby parked Hummer H2.

“Yes.”

Scar nodded.

Liu Lihui couldn’t interpose any word, the only thing he could do currently was watching those two men advancing towards Hummer. He was little lost, so he shook his head and thought that this time such a big matter had happened, if he couldn’t find the murderer because of lots of complexities, then once again he would determine the nature of this incident as the fight within the Underworld gangs.

It seemed like, very soon, in Yanjing, the top three big reactionary gangs would have the convergence point.

Along with Scar, Ye Feng went towards Hummer, and noticed that Zhao Yibei's corpse had already been taken away.

“Just a moment ago, I called someone to take hiis body away. There is no need to preserve him, since tomorrow is the cremation.”

Scar was looking very depressed.

“Give me a call during his funeral, I'm sorry for him.”

Ye Feng said that and remained silent for a long time. Since he hadn't attained ten years of Cultivation, otherwise, he could have used Immortal Technique to preserve his soul

“No, you killed Song Tianying to help him get his revenge, that's already more than enough.”

Scar said that, and suddenly a hint of determination flashed in his eyes : “Ye Elder brother, I have something which I want to discuss with you.”

“Huh? Then say it.”

Ye Feng nodded.

“Today, when this thing will be over, then I will give up this Heavenly Serpent gang and will tag along with you, what do you think about it?”

Scar said that somewhat apprehensively. As he clearly knew that earlier Ye Feng had a liking for him completely because of the power and influence of Heavenly Serpent Gang. If he gave up his Gang, would Ye Feng still need him as his little brother?

However, he really wanted to practice martial arts with the help of Ye Feng. It was not because he wanted to give an account of the scar on his face or the death of his wife, rather because in the future, he wanted to protect the people who were important to him. He would never allow such a thing happen to any of his dear ones, like Zhao Yibei.

“At present, what is the situation of Heavenly Serpent Gang?”

Ye Feng didn't answer him directly, instead asked one.

“All the properties of Heavenly Serpent Public Security Company have been swallowed by Cai Wu and Song Hu. Apart from this, the majority of my members are now at the side of Song Hu. I am left with just twenty or thirty trusted men.”

Scar shook his head, obviously, he had a feeling that the current situation was not good: “Song Hu has handled this matter very smoothly and tactfully, not only he colluded with Black Dragon Association, but he also processed all legal documents of this company quite well. Moreover, I have a doubt that he also has even bigger backstage

“Mysterious organisation?”

Ye Feng eyes flashed with coldness, this was that organisation who sent someone to kill him secretly. He was already Ye Feng's enemy, now the time had arrived when Ye Feng must investigate thoroughly about him, to find out his true identity, and then eradicate him completely.

Otherwise, how a sharp edge on a person's back, continuously keeps on hurting him awfully, exactly that, Ye Feng was in an awfully bad mood.

“Should be.”

Scar replied with a dignified look.

“Then leave this thing to me. Oh, by the way, how many assets do you still have now?”

Ye Feng asked again.

Scar listened to that and immediately replied : “There is a BMW car, a Hummer, Tianhua Casino warehouse, which probably has some cash and gold, altogether it would be more than ten million only these much. Tianhua Casino has already been designated under the name of Song Hu. ”

“Enough, since this is the case, then forget about leaving Heavenly Serpent Gang.”

Ye Feng shook his head and said : “You put things here processed, bring all of your trusted brothers and make a fresh start, *i.e.* start from scratch, and this time primarily with the low profile. When the right time arrives, I will teach you martial arts then.”

“Yes!”

Scar nodded seriously.

To make it work out successfully, it would really need a very hard work. Moreover, to again achieve power and influence like earlier, which he had earned over a decade of hard labour, it was just simple to say, but actually not that simple to achieve. But it was not difficult as well. At least for Scar, the death of Zhao Yibei has made him set his firm resolve thoroughly.

He had a belief that Ye Feng would certainly lead them to glory!

“As for Song Hu, Where is he now?”

Ye Feng’s eyes flashed with coldness as he asked.

In order to get rid of a threatening opponent, he couldn’t afford even the tiny bit of dragging!

“In Imperial Palace.”

Scar said that, but when he noticed Ye Feng had some doubts, then immediately explained : “In the Southwest side of Yanjing, there is Imperial Entertainment Club, which is the headquarters of Black Dragon Association, and is popularly known as Imperial Palace.”

“Got it, now you hurry back to your work.”

Ye Feng nodded his head, as he asked position and the general situation of Imperial Palace. And then he got out of the car, moved sideways into a dark alley, and quietly put on the mask.

Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge were the same people, except Long Wan'er and Ye Wentian, nobody knew about this thing. Ye Feng still needed to wear the mask to hide his identity from the outsiders!

For this kind of activity which involved killing people, he was disinclined to ride in a car, so as to avoid leaving any kind of clue. When he displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, his speed was terrific – a speed of 120 km per hour in the city. Moreover, he wasn't at all afraid of traffic jams, very swiftly he kept on moving ahead.

In the shadows of the city, the blurred afterimage of Ye Feng was appearing and disappearing unceasingly. It seemed like Ye Feng, as a demon, was rapidly advancing towards the south-west direction, and soon saw a magnificent luxury building, on the roadside, just as described by Scar.

Imperial Entertainment Club!

As compared to Tianhua Casino, it was more luxurious. Unlike the bar street which was so noisy, it had the high-end atmosphere, because the business of Black Dragon Association was primarily established in the main city, which was totally dependent on senior official and rich merchants. Therefore, it was totally different from Heavenly Serpent Gang.

In the eyes of outsiders, Heavenly Serpent Gang was just a Public Security company.

Wearing a mask, Ye Feng, on the way to Imperial Palace, first went to a clothing store and bought a pair of casual clothes. After putting them on, he rushed towards his destination. Soon he reached there, and with a stride walk, he went inside.

As the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, it was quite natural for Scar to be familiar with the construction of Imperial Palace. Therefore, very conveniently, he roughly described its structure to Ye Feng all the way through.

Finally, he came inside the Palace, however without paying even the slightest bit of attention towards the front desk beautiful woman who was flabbergasted seeing him there, he directly went into the elevator and pressed the button on the fourth floor. The Imperial Palace occupied a broad land area, therefore it was not that high. The fourth floor was its top floor, but the facility available on each floor was very rich, various senior official and rich merchants liked coming to this place.

.....

In the building of Imperial Entertainment Club, on the fourth floor, there was a magnificent and dazzling conference room, in which a group of five people were sitting, completely involved in some kind of discussion.

There was the boss of Black Dragon Association, Dubang Long, along

with his two high-ranking personnel. He was discussing matters with Heavenly Serpent Gang's Song Hu, along with a woman, who was originally supervising the financial affairs of Heavenly Serpent Public Security Company. Altogether, there were five people, and all were looking quite dignified.

“My son was killed.”

Song Hu put down the cell phone, and with a dark gloomy face, said: “Moreover, that boy surnamed ‘Ye’ has not died yet.”

Until now, the blocked news had finally reached his ears.

Chapter 098: Strange Master

In the magnificent conference hall, the facial expression of those five people was not looking quite good.

Dubang Long, the boss of Black Dragon Association, a tanned skinned man, wearing a big sapphire ornamental thumb ring, continuously tapping his rough and powerful fingers on the tabletop, and currently holding a gloomy facial expression, was looking incomparably powerful.

On the highway, the sniper missed his target, and the death of Tianhua Casino's Song Tianying, both of these incidents had baffled them. Therefore, finally, their people were assigned to thoroughly investigate these incidents. This failure also couldn't be completely blamed on their intelligence report, because Scar along with the Criminal Police team, had really done a great job, in maintaining an utmost secrecy.

"So, that boy surnamed 'Ye' must be eliminated as soon as possible, otherwise, he can move towards Lin Clan for help, then that would become more troublesome."

Dubang Long's voice was very infectious and super appealing, to be able to become the boss of a Gang, was absolutely not a mediocrity: "It seems that it is necessary to apply to Cai Shao, to call the Hidden Pavilion Master to come over here."

Hearing these words "Hidden Pavilion Master," many of them couldn't bear but shuddered, including that originally supervising the financial affairs of Heavenly Serpent Public Security Company, a 30-year-old, still

attractive woman. As soon as she heard this name, her face turned deathly white, obviously, she thought of something, which deeply frightened her from inside.

“For the time being, Cai Shao doesn’t want to be in the direct conflict with Lin Clan, so, making Hidden Pavilion Master deal with that boy surnamed ‘Ye’, will Cai Shao agree with this point?”

The squared face man, Song Hu look dignified as he said that.

“Or should we pay money to look for a killer again?”

That charming young woman tightly frowned as she said that.

“Too late, this matter must be processed as early as possible.”

Dubang Long said with a very loud and resounding voice : “There’s a rumour, that the boy surnamed ‘Ye’ is closely related with a Martial arts expert, moreover, his engagement is already settled with Lin Clan’s eldest daughter, Miss Lin. Therefore, Cai Shao has already considered him as his prime target.”

After finished saying that, he immediately pulled out his cell phone and dialled a mysterious telephone number. After several switches over, finally, he heard a sweet female voice: “Hello, this is the Personal Secretary of Cai Shao, you are the boss of Black Dragon Association, Dubang Long, please report your Operation Code.”

“Four-Four-Three-Nine-Eight-Two.”

When Dubang Long reported these six digits code, the other side once again transferred the call, but this time the call was transferred directly to Cai Shao.

“What’s the matter?”

From the other side, a male voice, processed from a Voice changing machine, immediately passed through the cell phone, so that nobody could judge his age.

“Cai Shao, Black Dragon Association’s Dubang Long, Four-Four-Three-Nine-Eight-Two.”

Dubang Long said that and then looked towards Song Hu.

“Song Hu from Heavenly Serpent Gang, Four-Four-Seven-Seven-One-Three.”

Song Tiger added a sentence.

“Applying for Hidden Pavilion Master to deal with Ye Feng, Cai Shao, how do you think about it?”

Immediately Dubang Long spoke out his purpose.

The other side of the phone was silent for a long time, it seemed like he was analysing the pros and cons of this measure. Almost a minute later,

finally Cai Shao replied : “Code – Zero Five Five has already set out, ten minutes later, he will arrive at Imperial Palace, keep watch at the reception. Dubang Long, you can directly issue the order.”

“Yes, Cai Shao.”

Hearing that, Dubang Long became extremely delighted, then he heard the other person hung up the phone. Every time he called Cai Shao, he used to talk with him by holding a fearful and apprehensive feeling, because, an year ago, that incident of Southern Heavenly Gates’ complete destruction, had cast an indelible shadow in his heart.

“Wait, after ten minutes, I’ll order Hidden Pavilion Master, to directly go to the boy surnamed ;Ye’, and get rid of him quickly.”

Dubang Long said that, gradually a hint of malicious colour crawled over his face.

However, at this point of moment, suddenly an unexpected sound passed from the next door : “I’m truly sorry, I’m afraid that you have to go first.”

“Who is it!”

Dubang Long promptly responded, he quickly opened the drawer and pulled out a pistol!

This level of the secret meeting, he already had tight protection at several places outside the hall, then how could it possible that someone

could secretly listen to their conversation from the next door? Moreover, the sound-insulated function of this conference hall was extremely good, how could a person hear them talking from the next door, and also could pass on the sound?

But he didn't get any answer, instead, an ice blue ray of light flashed and arrived before his eyes!

Sword qi!

An ice blue light as if Sword's ray of light, penetrated the wall, and cut the midair of the conference hall in just one fell swoop. Everything happened so fast, that nobody even got the time to respond, when it came and directly pierced through the heart of Dubang Long!

His heartbeat instantly stopped.

Immediately, that ice blue Sword qi disappeared, leaving behind the dead body of Dubang Long, whose chest was getting more and more bright red, since fresh blood was surging out of it continuously. The pistol in his hand fell on the table, and his whole body overturned. The big sapphire ornamental ring on his finger was reflecting a dazzling light. He died with his eyes wide open.

He didn't even know who had killed him!

Immediately, an orangish-red coloured, long sword cut opened a big hole on one side of the wall, by taking a broad view, one could only see a faint blurred afterimage of an individual, behind the wall.

“Ah!”

Immediately afterwards, a blood-curling screech of Song Hu rang out in the entire room. Sitting beside him, that charming young married woman turned her head to look towards the source of the sound, and shockingly saw Song Hu's chest was soaked with fresh blood. Terror-stricken, she turned and hurriedly moved backwards while dashing with several nearby chairs.

Who was he after all?

The remaining three people quickly turned rattled by someone's presence. The two high ranked personnel of Black Dragon Association hurriedly raised their pistols, but actually they could only see several faint blurred afterimages frequently appearing and disappearing all over the rooms in front of their eyes, it seemed that he was a masked man!

That person certainly was Ye Feng, very tactfully he hid in the next door, and with his Zhenqi sword, quietly drew a hole in the wall, so that he could hear the discussion of the people present in the Conference hall. And the moment Dubang Long hung up the phone, he instantly chose this time to attack, and immediately brought his plan into action.

The degree of the sharpness of his Zhenqi sword was naturally extraordinary, not even a wall could block him.

By using his long ice blue Sword qi, he killed Dubang Long, and immediately after that, he activated his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace and instantly killed Song Hu. Thereafter, when he saw the other three

people had pulled out their pistols, without a bit of hesitation, he moved quickly, and all of a sudden a red light flashed in the conference hall, and then immediately disappeared.

Those three people didn't even get the time to react, and suddenly, Ye Feng beheaded them, just at one fell swoop!

“This trip really turned out right for me, I can't think why Cai Shao has targeted me as his most important goal, what did I do wrong to him?”

While thinking about this, and still wearing the mask, he quickly drew back to the next door, leaving the corpses of five people behind in the conference hall.

He must hide outside, because just after ten minutes, Hidden Pavilion Master would arrive. Ye Feng was very much interested in having a look at him, because he actually wanted to see how the card of Cai Shao was.

Since the opposite party was his opponent now, that was the reason why Ye Feng must know himself and his opponent! Now, both sides were in the dark, hence, the more he would know the opposite party, the more advantage he would get over him.

Generally Ye Feng used to expose Mo Jiuge's identity, and Cai Shao only exposed the identity of a skilled person from the underworld. The available data was extremely few which he could extract just from the previous telephone conversation, Cai Shao handled affairs very discretely.

“If I will know who Cai Shao is, it will become quite easier for me, and

then I'll directly kill him and finish this matter.....”

Ye Feng shook his head, it seemed like he must continue to be careful almost everywhere.

Outside the building of Imperial Entertainment Club, he hid in the shadow of the thick bushes for around 10 minutes. He felt that the atmosphere in the club had tensed up. This news, that five people were killed including Dubang Long and Song Hu, had quietly spread among the high ranked personnel of Black Dragon Association. But since, the matter was quite serious in nature, so it had not been formally disclosed.

When ten minutes passed, finally a strange figure appeared in Ye Feng's field of vision, and went straight towards the entrance of Imperial Entertainment Club.

The strange figure, dressed in a huge and heavy windproof coat, looked very tall and strong, his whole head was wrapped in a hat, and was entirely covered by cloth from head to toe, without revealing even the nickels and dimes. From this fellow, Ye Feng felt a faint trace of danger, was this so-called “Hidden Pavilion Master”?

“A martial artist from the Martial arts world? No, he is not, this kind of feeling, it doesn't look like

As when Ye Feng was busy guessing about him, by keeping his stature completely motionless, at the same time, that strange figure suddenly turned and looked towards Ye Feng, and the next moment, a pair of his shining eyes suddenly met with the eyes of Ye Feng!

“Shinning eyes? What stuff is this

Ye Feng’s heart cursed loudly, immediatley he got up and set out to escape. At present, he had no idea about the strength of the opposite party, hence he couldn’t act rashly.

But seeing this, that strange figure immediately changed his direction, and rushed towards the place where Ye Feng was, and then started chasing after him with an incredibly fast speed!

Chapter 099: Dragon Claw Hand Technique Second Level

When Ye Feng saw the speed of the opposite party, it blew up his mind.

“This speed, 100m in four-five seconds?”

Luckily his speed was not as good as Ye Feng, but since Ye Feng had already displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, which made him feel relieved : ” Then I’ll play with you.....”

He jumped aside to escape and maintain a distance from the opposite party, simultaneously also started circulating Zhenqi rapidly through his meridians, and thus became almost ready to display Dragon Claw Hand Technique any moment.

Earlier he had thoroughly read the ancient book, therefore he knew that the essence of Dragon Claw Hand Technique was in achieving the second level, then only he could release Zhenqi from his body in the form of a Dragon claw to grasp his target. Comprehending the second level of Dragon Claw Hand Technique was very difficult, however, for Ye Feng, it was nothing but just an ordinary trick.

As far as grasping the control of Zhenqi’s circulation within the meridians was concerned, Ye Feng could be said as on the Grand master rank.

Under the light footsteps, he pounded his both hands separately in the

air, suddenly his Zhenqi rushed out from his body, and the next moment, his hands took the form of cloud-style Dragon claw hand!

(Lastvoice : There are different moves of Dragon Claw Hand Techniques, like Dragon Claw Hand -cloud style, bead style, moon style, etc.)

In a flash, Ye Feng caught the brown coloured hat of that strange figure, and with his one claw hand, gently lifted his hat, and directly blew it off!

Suddenly, an oily bald head appeared in front of him. By looking at him closely, Ye Feng noticed that his shining eyes were looking pale and emaciated, with sunken eyes, in short, his whole appearance was making him look like a drug addict.

“Is this?”

A sudden sight of that strange figure sent a shiver down Ye Feng's spine, what is this guy? A zombie? A Phantom? Or a Drug addict?

If Ye Wentian would see this scene, he would be surprised to the extent of jaw dropping. Ye Feng comprehended the second level of Dragon Claw Hand Technique extremely fast! Truly a genius!

In fact, it was not only because Ye Feng was highly talented, but also because originally there was a huge difference between Zhenqi and inner qi. In case of inner qi , releasing out inner qi from the body was very difficult, but in Zhenqi it was as simple as eating food.

After uncovering the hat of that strange figure, he didn't hesitate and moved rapidly, leaving behind an afterimage in-situ, while at the same time, he continued changing hand movements, displaying a series of Dragon Claw moves, revealing bead style and then moon style one after another!

The strange figure stayed around the blurred afterimage left behind by Ye Feng, and waved his arms to grab that afterimage, but once again Ye Feng pounded his claw hands, and took the opportunity to lift his huge windproof coat and throw it away.

To one's surprise, his whole body was covered with long brown hair!

“Crap! A gorilla?”

This sight scared him for a moment, could it be that Cai Shao was one of the devils doctors from Zhuan Clan's, and was a genetic modification enthusiast?

Suddenly a thought flashed in his mind: Right, once Scar had said that those who were the victims of this new drug, after getting stabilised for one year, they all vanished later. Could it be that it was somehow connected with Hidden Pavilion Master?

There was no doubt that the physical strength of this thing was formidable, this thing could also clearly see Ye Feng's quick movement as well as his blurred afterimage, moreover, he was punching with a force of 500 kg. There was not much difference between the present strength of Ye Feng and this thing.

Unfortunately, this thing had low IQ, who clearly couldn't distinguish between the remnant shade and entity, moreover, he wasn't following any tricks or important composition while fighting.

“Such being the case, then, I don't need to be afraid of you.”

Ye Feng's heart turned a bit ruthless, and he decided not to escape anymore, instead he turned back, and suddenly his stature flashed. And in an instant, an orangish-red Zhenqi sword emerged out in his hand.

Shua!

A metal crashing sound resounded since Ye Feng's sword had been blocked by the hairy arm of that strange thing.

“It's really hard.”

Ye Feng thought that perhaps if this guy would face the submachine gun fire, he wouldn't be afraid of it, because the sharpness of his Zhenqi sword was no less than general firearms.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Ka! Puff!

However, Ye Feng didn't give up, quickly he moved towards his neck and hit on his neck continuously, after five strikes, he finally truncated the head of that clumsy strange person, leaving behind a headless body with flying head!

Then, he noticed that originally this strange figure's skin was very thin, which was covered with long brown hair. But hidden within his skin was a layer of steel, which was used for his protection and which had covered his whole body.

His head was sliced off, and he finally fell to the ground completely dead, still his blood didn't stream out much. He was simply similar to the dry corpse or could be said as the mummy.

“Really abnormal

All of a sudden, Ye Feng heard the sound of footsteps coming from a distant place, hence he immediately put away his Zhenqi sword, and without staying there anymore, he instantly turned and left Imperial Entertainment Club.

Such a weirdo, Ye Feng wouldn't pay attention towards him if he was alone. However, if the number of this thing was more than one, then it would be extremely difficult to deal with them. Surprisingly, he didn't even know yet how did Cai Shao come around this stuff?

Without thinking much, he quickly left the spot.

This incident would certainly attract a group of police, but Ye Feng was not in the mood to get trapped in a trouble once again. Earlier, that incident with Miao Zhenqiang, he should have woken up by now, but still hadn't come to look for Ye Feng, and Ye Feng also had no clue why he didn't come after him.

Ye Feng didn't think about it, and directly returned to Qingfeng Park.

Quietly, he went to the side of the villa in the woods, as he just wanted to take off his mask, but suddenly he discovered something fishy. He saw the lights of his villa were turned off from a long time, under the moonlight, street light was looking calm and indifferent, insects were joyously chirping, and in the midst of this harmonious scenery, there was an individual, dressed in purple Chinese-style gown, standing on the street with his hands crossed, and was looking directly towards the entrance of the villa, as if he was waiting for someone.

“Who is this person?”

Ye Feng immediately tightened up his guard, and quietly moved a few steps aside. Soon, the front of that purple gown person appeared in front of his eyes, he was a 30-year-old man. The aura around him was very calm and steady, as if it was safe to deal with him.

“It's not right, these facial features..... someone from Long Clan? He pretty much looks like Long Mo'ran”

Ye Feng remained stunned seeing a person from Long Clan had come to look for him. Could it be that he knew that Ye Feng had returned from his trip, therefore he came over to track down the whereabouts of the Masked man?

This possibility was very high, however, why this guy, who was standing in front of the villa, didn't dare to go in? If this guy entered the villa, then he would certainly find that Ye Feng was not inside, hence, highly likely he would very much suspect that he must have some sort of

relationship with the Masked man.

“It seems like I need to attain ten years of Cultivation soon, then only I can display ‘Shadow Spirit Technique’.

(Lastvoice : to be present at several places at the same time.”

Ye Feng thought that once he would attain ten years of Cultivation, then he would be able to congeal his Shadow Spirit, and could easily use ‘Shadow Spirit Technique’, to be present at multiple places, at the same time. By displaying this technique, he could branch out a false body. Although this false body would be useless, but under some circumstances, it could be extremely convenient to deceive people.

Now he finally understood why Miao Zhenjiang didn’t come to bother him, originally a person from Long Clan had to come in person

Ye Feng carefully observed him for a long time and found that the man standing in front of the villa, didn’t move even a half inch, as if he was a statue. He was just constantly staring towards the villa, who knew what was running in his mind currently.

“Not good, ah, if this guy continues standing like this until dawn, then I can’t get into the house, can I?”

On the one side, a thirty-year-old man from Long Clan, whose Cultivation was undoubtedly higher than Long Wan’er, was constantly standing like this, while on the other side, Ye Feng, who really wanted to enter the villa, was still hidden in the woods, since he had a feeling that if he would try to go inside the villa, he would surely be detected by the opposite party.

“Who?”

Just at this time, the purple dressed man suddenly said in a soft voice, as he turned his head and looked towards Ye Feng’s side.

“Not good, I just took one breath disorderly, and suddenly got discovered by him!”

That jolted Ye Feng’s heart out, and he didn’t dare to continue hiding.

“Ha ha ha.”

Ye Feng chuckled, wearing a mask, he came out of the woods: “How come someone from Long Clan appeared here? What’s wrong, do you want to enter the domain of Ye Clan?”

He speculated that this villa was Ye Wentian’s property, hence, Long Clan couldn’t dare to go in, which was quite normal. Therefore, to frighten the opposite party was also very interesting.

“Myself, Long Zi from Long Clan, and, yourself Mo Jiuge?”

Purple-dressed man, seeing him stunned, felt surprised for a moment, as if he hadn’t thought that it was so easy to see the Masked man.

“Yes, do you need any advice from me?”

Ye Feng asked that in a sinking voice.

“Ha Ha, Mo elder brother, wise people don’t speak in code words.”

Long Zi smiled steadily, he appeared very cordial and incomparably kind: “Your Excellency, whatever you have done to our Wan’er, presumably I don’t need to mention it, right? Frankly speaking, I just want to discuss something with you, your Excellency

As the voice fell, Ye Feng suddenly saw him in action, the purple dressed man’s stature jumped high and immediately flung a foot towards Ye Feng!

“A test?”

Ye Feng looked dignified.

Long Clan had gained expertise in swordsmanship, there was a rumour that Romantic Sword Technique was the most aggressive technique of their clan. However, Long Zi didn’t use a sword, instead used Dragon Leg Technique, which explained everything that he obviously didn’t want to kill Ye Feng.

Defence style!

Ye Feng suddenly entered the state, and immediately pounded his hand in the air, instantly Zhenqi streamed out from his body and took

the form of a cloud-style Dragon Claw Hand!

Long Zi hadn't ever thought that Ye Feng could be able to assign away his "inner qi" from his body, and would suddenly hold his ankle to block his attack. Seeing this, his complexion suddenly changed!

Chapter 100: Commotion At The School Entrance

When Long Zi's ankle was caught by Ye Feng in the air, his heart skipped a beat. Earlier, he had heard that Mo Jiuge looked like a young guy, so was it really possible for him to actually assign away his inner qi from his body? Moreover, wasn't the move, just displayed by him, Ye Clan's Dragon Claw Hand Technique?

His qi immediately returned and restored in his Dantian, and by stabilising his balance, he stopped his stature stiffly, then smoothly he fell from the air and stood firmly to the ground! Otherwise, he must have been thrown down to the ground directly by Ye Feng, like a dog eating the food.

“Well, boy, assigning away inner qi from the body, is not a simple thing.”

From the bottom of his heart, Long Zi appreciated him : “What is your relationship with Ye Clan?”

Earlier, Long Wan'er had said that Ye Feng was totally an ordinary human, therefore whether it was Long Mo'ran, or any other person of Long Clan, nobody had suspected him.

If he hadn't used on time the Covert Kill Technique, then regardless of who it was, everybody would have doubted him.

“My relationship with Ye Clan, just gratitude towards them, that's all.”

Ye Feng replied in a low voice.

“It seems that the relationship is not shallow, unfortunately.”

Long Zi shook his head: “By seeing your talent, I must say, if you will be properly trained, then you must become the younger generation eminent in the martial arts world.”

“And how is that possible?”

When Ye Feng saw he stopped his stature, he asked that vigilantly.

“You are really courageous to ask that.”

By holding a gentle expression, Long Zi said : ” I don’t know how Wan’er have got attached to Your excellency, but if I allow Your excellency to join my Long Clan, then we will be considered as the relatives by marriage.”

Ye Feng listened to that, and almost laughed, he thought that actually, this guy had developed a liking for him only because he was at such a young age, still had the talent to release inner qi from his body. Therefore, he wanted now to draw him towards his clan.

“Are you representing Long Mo’ran?”

By putting on a very calm and composed appearance, Ye Feng lightly

said: “I don’t think, Long Mo’ran will ever allow me for that.”

“Ha Ha.”

Long Zi laughed: “If the Head of our Clan knows their son-in-law’s incredible talent, inevitably he will be overjoyed since it’s a golden opportunity to enhance the strength of our clan. Moreover, Ye Clan has already quitted the Martial arts world entirely, and also, it no longer has any connection with Long Clan, therefore, joining our Long Clan, doesn’t mean being hostile towards Ye Clan. ”

“Thank you senior for this invitation, this matter is truly very important for me, so allow me some time to think about it.”

Ye Feng’s heart totally disagreed with him, but on the surface, he didn’t let him know about it, instead he asked for some time to think about it. Currently for him, the most important thing was to deceive this guy, and then go back to take a good rest and conserve his strength, as so to deal with possible threats from Cai Shao.

“Alright, I believe that this young hero is a smart guy.”

Long Zi smiled : “Oh by the way, if Your excellency makes a decision, then you may come to the East China Sea, recently including the Head of our clan, most of the young guys of Long Clan have left for the East China Sea. I will wait respectfully for you there.”

Ye Feng noticed that although he was very much satisfied and pleased with Ye Feng’s appearance, but there was a hidden trace of concern

lurking around his forehead. In fact, Long Zi also knew that to convince Long Mo'ran to accept Mo Jiuge as his son-in-law, was really like biting iron balls.

However, the talent demonstrated by Ye Feng, really made him jealous, if he hadn't tried to draw him towards his Clan, then that would be more regrettable for him. He thought he would invite Mo Jiuge to the East China Sea, where he would take the opportunity to highlight his talent before Long Mo'ran, then it might change the perception of Long Mo'ran.....

Entire Long Clan was really not monolithic.

“Got it.”

In a sinking voice, Ye Feng said that, however, he was in the state of astonishment, and was also a bit perplexed hearing that Long Clan went to the East China Sea, what did they want to do there? Was it because they were looking for the fairy of the East China Sea?

After several random nonsense talks, finally, Long Zi turned around and departed completely satisfied. Unfortunately, in fact, Ye Feng had no intention to be a part of Long Clan. As far as the temperament of Long Mo'ran was concerned, Ye Feng didn't know after seeing his talent, Long Mo'ran would really appreciate him or feel jealous of him, it was really hard to predict yet.

Seeing that purple-dressed person finally left, Ye Feng felt relieved. Quietly, he returned to his villa, and without turning on the lights, he directly went to take rest.

He didn't even know that his meeting with Long Zi, had been thoroughly observed by someone.

“This kid, although he got an invitation from Long Clan, still, he is entirely unconcerned about it. His temperament is commendable!”

Huang Peirong, stood by the roadside, under the shadow of the trees, excessively appreciated Mo Jiuge. He was the one who brought the news of Ye Feng's return to Yanjing, moreover, he also hurried to catch up with him, since he wanted to investigate about him. However, before he could stop Mo Jiuge, unfortunately, he had already been forestalled by Long Clan ahead.

Seeing Long Zi departed after admitting defeat, he also repressed his thought of jumping out in front of Ye Feng. The attraction of the influence of his Mt. Tianzhu paradise, as compared to the incoming messenger of Long Clan, didn't stand any chance, not even a least bit.

“This matter can take it's time, on the contrary, the East China Sea is actually being very lively recently, surprisingly Long Mo'ran's desire to marry, has mobilised the entire Long Clan

Huang Peirong was thinking this, while hiding his stature.

Finally around the villa, tranquilly thoroughly restored now, the ground was appearing like silver frost had spread out, the cool breeze was blowing, shadows of the trees were swaying, under the moonlight the cold weather was showing its colour.

.....

The next morning, Ye Feng along with Su Menghan, walked to the school together.

Half a month left for the college entrance examination, this was the last week for the students to go to the school for attending review classes. After a week, they wouldn't need to go to the school, since the school would provide them leave, so that they could prepare for the exams.

Actually, in the last exam, Ye Feng had scored the lowest marks in his class. His rank was first from the bottom, which had made Su Menghan very anxious for him. And the main reason was, Ye Feng's heart was completely distracted and he seemed to be completely not in the study.

“Ye Feng, starting from today, I'll try my best to tutor you and help you with your study, you hear me?”

On the road, very earnestly Su Menghan said that.

“Ah How is the matter between Xie Clan and your Dad going on?”

Ye Feng nodded, and then shifted the topic by asking that.

“Certainly, will sue them.”

Su Menghan said that bitterly, and then immediately turned a little

embarrassed: “But I don’t know how to do.”

“I’ll ask Scar to help you with this.”

Ye Feng casually spoke that. Scar, as the boss of a reactionary gang, had enough social experience, hence helping Su Menghan to handle this kind of matter was extremely easy for him. Moreover, regarding prosecution, the court would make Su Xinchang appear in the court to testify, in that case, neither Xie Min nor Xie Chengye could run away from this trial.

Even though, if any problem would arise , that wouldn’t be a big deal for Ye Feng, he could directly resolve it with his sword. However, that was not the case with Su Menghan, she would definitely not accept Ye Feng’s way of solving things by killing people.

After saying that, Ye Feng gave a call to Scar, making him help to manage this matter, while being in touch with Su Menghan.

“Ye elder brother, don’t worry about this matter. The chief justice of Yanjing court is the person of Lin Clan, in addition, we have Su Xinchang’s oral confession, so consider it as all settled!”

Scar made a solemn vow to comply.

From his voice, Ye Feng could easily feel his sadness still mingled with his voice. In such a short time, such a strong man like Scar, became unable to recover from the shock of the bereaved.

“In the World of the Immortals, physical death does not mean an absolute death Unfortunately, in this world, because of my current Cultivation level, I am still unable to do anything.”

Deep inside his heart, Ye Feng felt somewhat pity and guilt.

But the prime culprit of all these matters was that Cai Shao of the mysterious organization!

When Ye Feng came around the school's gate along with Su Menghan, suddenly he found that there was a huge commotion going on at school's entrance. There were lots of cars and people, moreover, in addition to the students, there were also many parents surrounded the school gate.

Was it because the college entrance exam at hand, so parents had come to send their children to the school?

However, soon those two understood that this was not the case, an old age youth pursued them from behind, and heavily patted on Ye Feng's shoulder. It was Ou B: “Small Bee, take a quick look, I have heard that Ms Lin has come over here looking for you, and everyone is just an onlooker! ”

What?

Did that Lin Shiqing come to the school just to look for him?

Ye Feng and Su Menghan stood stunned in silence, and totally motionless with their eyes wide open.